

# EVELINA.

Vol II.



T.Lownder Published Nov: 24 1779 .

F. Barlolozzi Julp.



A NEW EDITION

IN TWO VOLUMES

VOL.II



Printed for W. Lowndes Nº77, Fleet Street.

MDCCXCI.

of m dam Brow vou define T out; ton, and the l T a box felf dec. expenses T have wall The the and less a pl was

## EVELINA.

#### LETTER I.

EVELINA to the Rev. Mr. VILLARS.

Holborn, June 17th.

Y ESTERDAY Mr. Smith carried his point of making a party for Vauxhall, confisting of Madame Duval, M. Du Bois, all the Branghtons, Mr. Brown, himself,—and me!—for I find all endeavours vain to escape any thing which these people desire I should not.

There were twenty disputes previous to our setting out; first, as to the time of our going: Mr. Branghton, his son, and young Brown, were for six o'clock; and all the ladies and Mr. Smith were for eight;—

the latter, however, conquered.

Then, as to the way we should go; some were for a boat, others for a coach, and Mr. Branghton himfelf was for walking; but the boat at length was decided upon. Indeed this was the only part of the expedition that was agreeable to me; for the Thames was delightfully pleasant.

The garden is very pretty, but too formal; I should have been better pleased, had it consisted less of strait

walks, where

Grove nods at grove, each alley has its brother.

The trees, the numerous lights, and the company in the circle round the orchestra made a most brilliant and gay appearance; and had I been with a party less disagreeable to me, I should have thought it a place formed for animation and pléasure. There was a concert; in the course of which, a hauthois

VOL. II. B con-

concerto was fo charmingly played, that I could-have thought myself upon enchanted ground, had I had spirits more gentle to associate with. The

hautbois in the open air is heavenly.

Mr. Smith endeavoured to attach himself to me, with such officious assiduity and impertinent freedom, that he quite sickened me. Indeed M. Du Bois was the only man of the party to whom, voluntarily, I ever addressed myself. He is civil and respectful, and I have found nobody else so since I lest Howard Grove. His English is very bad; but I prefer it to speaking French myself, which I dare not venture to do. I converse with him frequently, both to disengage myself from others, and to oblige Madame Duval, who is always pleased when he is attended to.

As we were walking about the orchestra, I heard a bell ring; and, in a moment, Mr. Smith, slying up to me, caught my hand, and, with a motion too quick to be resisted, ran away with me many yards before I had breath to ask his meaning, though I struggled, as well as I could, to get from him. At last, however, I insisted upon stopping: "Stopping, Ma'am!" cried he; "why, we must run on, or we shall lose the cascade?"

And then again he hurried me away, mixing with a crowd of people, all running with fo much velocity, that I could not imagine what had raifed fuch an alarm. We were foon followed by the rest of the party; and my surprise and ignorance proved a source of diversion to them all, which was not exhausted the whole evening. Young Branghton, in particular, laughed till he could hardly stand.

The scene of the cascade I thought extremely pretty, and the general effect striking and lively.

But this was not the only furprife which was to divert them at my expense; for they led me about the garden purposely to enjoy my first fight of various other deceptions.

About

per.

was o

faid,

"Li

can the

11 F

pleasure

at my c

faid you

and four

I would

I was

ting, ar The-M

while th

me to a

" You

About ten o'clock, Mr. Smith having chosen a box in a very conspicuous place, we all went to supper. Much fault was found with every thing that was ordered, though not a morfel of any thing was left; and the dearness of the provisions, with conjectures upon what profit was made by them, supplied discourse during the whole meal.

When wine and cyder were brought, Mr. Smith faid, "Now let's enjoy ourfelves; now is the time, or never. Well, Ma'am, and how do you like Vaux-

hall?"

at I could

elf to me,

Bois was

espectful,

ien he is

iny yards

" Stop-

ng with

about

"Like it!" cried young Branghton; "why, how can she help liking it? she has never seen such a place before, that I'll answer for." -

" For my part," faid Miss Branghton, "I like

it because it is not vulgar."

"This must have been a fine treat for you, Miss," faid Mr. Branghton; "why, I fuppose you was never fo happy in all your life before?"

I endeavoured to express my fatisfaction with some pleasure; yet, I believe, they were much amazed

at my coldness.

" Miss ought to stay in town till the last night," faid young Branghton; " and then, it's my belief, she'd fay something to it! Why, Lord, it's the best night of any; there's always a riot,—and there the folks run about, and then there's fuch squealing and fqualling!-and there all the lamps are broke, -and the women run skimper scamper. -I declare I would not take five guineas to miss the last night!"

I was very glad when they all grew tired of fitting, and called for the waiter to pay the bill, The Miss Branghtons said they would walk on while the gentlemen fettled the account, and asked me to accompany them; which, however, I de-

clined.

"You girls may do as you pleafe," faid Madame Duval; "but as to me, I promife you, I sha'n't go nowhere without the gentlemen."

" No

"No more, I suppose, will my Cousin," said Miss Branghton, looking reproachfully towards Mr.

Smith.

This reflection, which I feared would flatter his vanity, made me most unfortunately request Madame Duval's permission to attend them. She granted it; and away we went, having promised to meet in the room.

To the room, therefore, I would immediately have gone: but the fifters agreed that they would first have a little pleasure; and they tittered and talked so loud, that they attracted universal notice.

"Lord, Polly," faid the eldest, "fuppose we

were to take a turn in the dark walks!"

"Aye, do," answered she; "and then we'll hide ourselves, and then Mr. Brown will think we are lost."

I remonstrated very warmly against this plan, telling them that it would endanger our missing the rest of the party all the evening.

"O dear," cried Miss Branghton, "I thought

how uneasy Miss would be without a beau!"

This impertinence I did not think worth answering; and, quite by compulsion, I followed them down a long alley, in which there was hardly any light.

By the time we came near the end, a large party of gentlemen, apparently very riotous, and who were hallooing, leaning on one another, and laughing immoderately, feemed to rush suddenly from behind some trees, and, meeting us face to face, put their arms at their sides, and formed a kind of circle, which first stopped our proceeding, and then our retreating, for we were presently entirely inclosed. The Miss Branghtons screamed aloud, and I was frightened exceedingly: our screams were answered with bursts of laughter, and for some minutes we were kept prisoners, till at last, one of them rudely seizing hold of me, said I was a pretty little creature.

Terrified

Terrified to death, I struggled with such vehemence to disengage myself from him, that I succeeded, in spite of his efforts to detain me; and immediately, and with a fwiftness which fear only could have given me, I flew rather than ran up the walk, hoping to secure my fafety by returning to the lights and company we had fo foolishly left: but before I could possibly accomplish my purpose, I was met by another party of men, one of whom placed himself so directly in my way, calling out, "Whither fo fast, my love?"——that I could only have proceeded by running into his arms.

In a moment both my hands, by different persons, were caught hold of; and one of them, in a most familiar manner, defired, when I ran next, to accompany me in a race; while the rest of the party

stood still and laughed.

I was almost distracted with terror, and so breathlefs with running, that I could not speak; till another advancing, faid, I was as handsome as an angel, and defired to be of the party. I then just articulated, "For Heaven's fake, Gentlemen, let me pafs!"

Another then rushing suddenly forward, exclaimed, "Heaven and earth! what voice is that?—"

"The voice of the prettiest little actress I have feen this age," answered one of my persecutors.

"No,-no,-no-" I panted out, "I am no

actress,—pray let me go,—pray let me pass.—"
"By all that's facred," cried the same voice, which I then knew for Sir Clement Willoughby's, "'tis herself!"

"Sir Clement Willoughby!" cried I. "O Sir, affift—affift me—or I shall die with terror!"

"Gentlemen," cried he, difengaging them all from me in an instant, " pray leave this lady to me."

Loud laughs proceeded from every mouth, and two or three faid, Willoughby has all the luck! But one of them, in a passionate manner, vowed he

would not give me up, for that he had the first right to me, and would support it.

"You are mistaken," said Sir Clement, "this lady is—I will explain myself to you another time; but, I assure you, you are all mistaken."

And then taking my willing hand, he led me off, amidst the loud acclamations, laughter, and gross merriment of his impertinent companions.

As foon as we had escaped from them, Sir Clement, with a voice of surprise, exclaimed, "My dearest creature, what wonder, what strange revovolution, has brought you to such a spot as this?"

Ashamed of my situation, and extremely mortified to be thus recognized by him, I was for some time silent; and when he repeated his question, only stammered out, "I have,—I hardly know how, lost myself from my party.—"

He caught my hand, and eagerly pressing it, in a passionate voice said, "O that I had sooner met with thee!"

Surprised at a freedom so unexpected, I angrily broke from him, saying, "Is this the protection you give me, Sir Clement?"

And then I saw, what the perturbation of my mind had prevented my sooner noticing, that he had led me, though I know not how, into another of the dark alleys, instead of the place whither I meant to go.

"Good God!" I cried, "where am I?—What way are you going?"

"Where," answered he, "we shall be least ob-

Aftonished at this speech, I stopped short, and declared I would go no further.

" And why not, my angel?" again endeavouring to take my hand.

My heart beat with refentment; I pushed him away from me with all my strength, and demanded how he dared treat me with such insolence.

"Infolence!"

"Insolence!" repeated he.

"Yes, Sir Clement, infolence; from you, who know me, I had a claim for protection, -not to

fuch treatment as this."

"By Heaven," cried he, with warmth, "you distract me;—why, tell me,—why do I see you here?—Is this a place for Miss Anville?—these dark walks!—no party! no companion!—by all that's good, I can scarce believe my senses!"

Extremely offended at this speech, I turned angrily from him; and, not deigning to make any answer, walked on towards that part of the garden whence I perceived the lights and company.

He followed me; but we were both fome time

filent.

"So you will not explain to me your fituation!" faid he at length.

" No, Sir," answered I disdainfully.

"Nor yet—fuffer me to make my own interpretation?—"

I could not bear this strange manner of speaking; it made my very soul shudder,—and I burst into tears.

He flew to me, and actually flung himself at my feet, as if regardless who might see him, saying, "O, Miss Anville,—loveliest of women,—forgive my,—my—I beseech you forgive me;—if I have offended,—if I have hurt you—I could kill myself at the thought!—"

"No matter, Sir, no matter," cried I; "if I can but find my friends,—I will never speak to—

never see you again!"

"Good God!—good Heaven!—my dearest life, what is it I have done?—what is it I have said?—"

"You best know, Sir, what and why:—but don't hold me here,—let me be gone; and do you!"

" Not till you forgive me!-I cannot part with

you in anger."

"For shame, for shame, Sir!" cried I indignantly; "do you suppose I am to be thus compelled?—

do you take advantage of the absence of my friends

to affront me?"

"No, Madam," cried, he rifing; "I would fooner forfeit my life than act fo mean a part. But you have flung me into amazement unspeakable, and you will not condescend to listen to my request of giving me some explanation."

"The manner, Sir," faid I, "in which you fpoke that request, made, and will make, me scorn

to answer it."

"Scorn!-I will own to you, I expected not

fuch displeasure from Miss Anville."

"Perhaps, Sir, if you had, you would less vo-

luntarily have merited it."

"My dearest life, furely it must be known to you, that the man does not breathe who adores you so passionately, so fervently, so tenderly as I do!—Why, then, will you delight in perplexing me?—in keeping me in suspense?—in torturing me with doubt?—"

"I, Sir, delight in perplexing you!—you are much mistaken.—Your suspense, your doubts, your perplexities,—are of your own creating; and, believe me, Sir, they may offend, but they can never delight me:—but, as you have yourself raised, you

must yourfelf fatisfy, them."

"Good God!—that such haughtiness and such

fweetness can inhabit the same mansion!"

I made no answer; but quickening my pace, I walked on silently and sullenly, till this most impetuous of men, snatching my hand, which he grasped with violence, befought me to forgive him with such earnestness of supplication, that, merely to escape his importunities, I was forced to speak, and in some measure to grant the pardon he requested; though it was accorded with a very ill grace: but, indeed, I knew not how to resist the humility of his intreaties: yet never shall I recollect the occasion he gave me of displeasure, without feeling it renewed.

We

We now foon arrived in the midst of the general crowd; and, my own safety being then insured, I grew extremely uneasy for the Miss Branghtons, whose danger, however imprudently incurred by their own folly, I too well knew how to tremble for. To this consideration all my pride of heart yielded, and I determined to seek my party with the utmost speed; though not without a figh did I recollect the fruitless attempt I had made after the opera, of concealing from this man my unfortunate connections, which I was now obliged to make known.

I hastened, therefore, to the room, with a view of fending young Branghton to the aid of his sisters. In a very short time I perceived Madame Duval and

the rest looking at one of the paintings.

I must own to you honestly, my dear Sir, that an involuntary repugnance seized me at presenting such a set to Sir Clement,—he who had been used to see me in parties so different!—My pace slackened as I approached them,—but they presently perceived me.

"Ah, Mademoifelle!" cried M. Du Bois, " Que

je suis charmé de vous voir!"

"Pray, Miss," cried Mr. Brown, "where's Miss

Polly?"

"Why, Miss, you've been a long while gone," faid Mr. Branghton; "we thought you'd been lost. But what have you done with your cousins?"

I hefitated,—for Sir Clement regarded me with a

look of wonder.

"Pardi," cried Madame Duval, "I shan't let you leave me again in a hurry. Why, here we've been in such a fright!—and all the while I suppose, you've been thinking nothing about the matter."

"Well," faid young Branghton, "as long as Miss is come back, I don't mind; for as to Bid and Poll, they can take care of themselves. But the best joke is, Mr. Smith is gone all about a looking for you."

Thefe

These speeches were made almost all in a breath: but when, at last, they waited for an answer, I told them, that, in walking up one of the long alleys, we had been frightened and separated.

"The long alleys!" repeated Mr. Branghton; and, pray, what had you to do in the long alleys? why, to be fure, you must all of you have had a

mind to be affronted!"

This speech was not more impertinent to me, than surprising to Sir Clement, who regarded all the party with evident assonishment. However, I told young Branghton, that no time ought to be lost, for that his sisters might require his immediate protection.

"But how will they get it?" cried this brutal brother: "if they've a mind to behave in such a manner as that, they ought to protect themselves; and so they may for me."

"Well," faid the simple Mr. Brown, "whether you go or no, I think I may as well see after Miss

Polly."

The father then interfering, infifted that his fon

should accompany him; and away they went.

It was now that Madame Duval first perceived Sir Clement; to whom, turning with a look of great displeasure, she angrily said, "Ma foi, so you are comed here!—Of all the people in the world, I wonder, child, you would let such a—such a person as that keep company with you."

"I am very forry, Madam," faid Sir Clement in a tone of surprise, "if I have been so unfortunate as to offend you; but I believe you will not regret the honour I now have of attending Miss Anville, when you hear that I have been so happy as to do her some

fervice."

Just as Madame Duval, with her usual Ma foi, was beginning to reply, the attention of Sir Clement was wholly drawn from her, by the appearance of Mr. Smith, who, coming suddenly behind

me, and freely putting his hands on my shoulders, cried, "O ho, my little runaway, have I found you at last? I have been scampering all over the gardens for you; for I was determined to find you, if you were above ground.—But how could you be so cruel as to leave us?"

I turned round to him, and looked with a degree of contempt that I hoped would have quieted him: but he had not the fense to understand me; and, attempting to take my hand, he added, "Such a demure-looking lady as you are, who'd have thought of your leading one such a dance?—Come, now, don't be so coy; only think what a trouble I have had in running after you!"

"The trouble, Sir," faid I, "was of your own choice,—not mine." And I walked round to the other fide of Madame Duval.

Perhaps I was too proud;—but I could not endure that Sir Clement, whose eyes followed him with looks of the most surprised curiosity, should witness his unwelcome familiarity.

Upon my removal he came up to me, and, in a low voice, faid, "You are not, then, with the Mirvans?"

" No, Sir."

"And, pray,-may I ask,-have you left them long?"

" No, Sir."

"How unfortunate I am!—but yesterday I sent to acquaint the Captain I should reach the Grove by to-morrow noon! However, I shall get away as fast as possible. Shall you be long in town?"

"I believe not, Sir."

"And then, when you leave it, — which way —will you allow me to ask, which way you shall travel?"

"Indeed, I don't know."

"Not know!—But do you return to the Mirvans any more?"

" I—I can't tell, Sir."

And then I addressed myself to Madame Duval. with fuch a pretended earnestness, that he was obliged to be filent.

As he cannot but observe the great change in my fituation, which he knows not how to account for, there is fomething in all these questions, and this unrestrained curiosity, that I did not expect from a man who, when he pleases, can be so well-bred as Sir Clement Willoughby. He feems disposed to think, that the alteration in my companions authorifes an alteration in his manners. It is true, he has always treated me with uncommon freedom, but never before with fo difrespectful an abruptness. This observation, which he has given me cause to make, of his changing with the tide, has funk him more in my opinion than any other part of his conduct.

Yet I could almost have laughed when I looked at Mr. Smith, who no fooner faw me addressed by Sir Clement, than, retreating aloof from the company, he feemed to lofe at once all his happy felffufficiency and conceit: looking now at the baronet, now at himself; surveying, with forrowful eyes, his dress; struck with his air, his gestures, his easy gaiety; he gazed at him with envious admiration, and feemed himself, with conscious inferiority, to shrink into nothing.

Soon after, Mr. Brown running up to us, called out, "La, what, i'n't Miss Polly come yet?"

"Come," faid Mr. Branghton; "why, I thought you went to fetch her yourfelf, didn't you?"

"Yes, but I couldn't find her ;-yet I dare fay I've been over half the garden."

" Half! but why did not you go over it all?"

"Why, fo I will: but only I thought I'd just come and be if the was here first?"

"But where's Tom?"

"Why, I don't know; for he would not flay with me all as ever I could fay; for we met fome young young gentlemen of his acquaintance, and so he bid me, go and look myself; for he said, says he, I can divert myself better another way, says he."

This account being given, away again went this filly young man; and Mr. Branghton, extremely incenfed, faid he would go and see after them himself.

"So, now," cried Madame Duval, "he's gone too! why, at this rate, we shall have to wait for

one or other of them all night!"

Observing that Sir Clement seemed disposed to renew his inquiries, I turned towards one of the paintings, and, pretending to be very much occupied in looking at it, asked M. Du Bois some questions concerning the figures.

"O, Mon Dieu!" cried Madame Duval, "don't ask him; your best way is to ask Mr. Smith, for he's been here the oftenest. Come, Mr. Smith, I

dare fay you can tell us all about them."

"Why, yes, Ma'am, yes," faid Mr. Smith; who, brightening up at this application, advanced towards us with an air of assumed importance, which, however, fat very uneasily upon him, and begged to know what he should explain first: "For I have attended," faid he, "to all these paintings, and know every thing in them perfectly well; for I am rather fond of pictures, Ma'am; and, really, I must say, I think a pretty picture is a—a very—is really a very—is something very pretty—"

"So do I too," faid Madame Duval; "but pray, now, Sir, tell us who that is meant for?" pointing

to a figure of Neptune.

"That!—why, that, Ma'am, is,—Lord bless me, I can't think how I come to be so stupid, but really I have forgot his name;—and yet, I know it as well as my own too:—however, he's a General, Ma'am, they are all generals."

I faw Sir Clement bite his lips; and, indeed, fo

did I mine.

"Well," faid Madame Duval, "it's the oddest

dress for a general ever I see!"

"He seems so capital a figure," said Sir Clement, to Mr. Smith, "that I imagine he must be Gene-

ralissimo of the whole army.'

"Yes, Sir, yes," answered Mr. Smith, respectfully bowing, and highly delighted at being thus referred to, "you are perfectly right;—but I cannot for my life think of his name;—perhaps, Sir, you may remember it?"

"No, really," replied Sir Clement, "my acquaintance among the generals is not fo extensive."

The ironical tone of voice in which Sir Clement fpoke entirely disconcerted Mr. Smith; who, again retiring to an humble distance, seemed sensibly mortified at the failure of his attempt to recover his

consequence.

Soon after Mr. Branghton returned with his youngest daughter, whom he had rescued from a party of insolent young men; but he had not yet been able to find the eldest. Miss Polly was really frightened, and declared she would never go into the dark walks again. Her father, leaving her with us, went in quest of her sister.

While the was relating her adventures, to which nobody liftened more attentively than Sir Clement, we faw Mr. Brown enter the room. "O, la!" cried Mifs Polly, "let me hide myfelf, and don't

tell him I'm come."

She then placed herself behind Madame Duval,

in fuch a manner that she could not be seen.

"So Miss Polly is not come yet!" faid the simple fwain: "well, I can't think where she can be! I've been a looking, and looking, and looking all about, and I can't find her all I can do."

"Well, but, Mr. Brown," faid Mr. Smith,

" sha'n't you go and look for the lady again?"

"Yes, Sir," faid he, fitting down; but I must rest me a little bit first. You can't think how tired I am." "O fie, Mr. Brown, fie," cried Mr. Smith, winking at us, "tired of looking for a lady! Go,

go, for shame!"

"So I will, Sir, presently; but you'd be tired too, if you'd walked so far: besides, I think she's gone out of the garden, or else I must have seen something or other of her."

A he, he, he! of the tittering Polly, now betrayed

her, and so ended this ingenious little artifice.

At last appeared Mr. Branghton and Miss Biddy, who, with a face of mixed anger and confusion, addressing herself to me, said, "So, Miss, so you ran away from me! Well, see if I don't do as much by you some day or other! But I thought how it would be; you'd no mind to leave the gentlemen, though

you'd run away from me."

I was so much surprised at this attack, that I could not answer her for very amazement; and she proceeded to tell us how ill she had been used, and that two young men had been making her walk up and down the dark walks by absolute force, and as fast as ever they could tear her along; and many other particulars, which I will not tire you with relating. In conclusion, looking at Mr. Smith, she said, "But to be sure, thought I, at least all the company will be looking for me; so I little expected to find you all here, talking as comfortably as ever you can. However, I know I may thank my cousin for it!"

"If you mean me, Madam," faid I, very much shocked, "I am quite ignorant in what manner I

can have been accessary to your distress."

"Why, by running away fo. If you'd staid with us, I'll answer for it Mr. Smith and M. Du Bois would have come to look for us; but I suppose they

could not leave your ladyship."

The folly and unreasonableness of this speech would admit of no answer. But what a scene was this for Sir Clement! his surprise was evident; and I must acknowledge my confusion was equally great.

We

We had now to wait for young Branghton, who did not appear for some time; and during this interval it was with difficulty that I avoided Sir Clement, who was on the rack of curiosity, and dying

to speak to me.

When, at last, the hopeful youth returned, a long and frightful quarrel ensued between him and his father, in which his fisters occasionally joined, concerning his neglect; and he defended himself only by a brutal mirth, which he indulged at their

expense.

Every one now feemed inclined to depart,—when, as usual, a dispute arose upon the way of our going, whether in a coach or a boat. After much debating, it was determined that we should make two parties, one by the water and the other by land; for Madame Duval declared she would not, upon any account, go into a boat at night.

Sir Clement then faid, that if she had no carriage in waiting, he should be happy to see her and me

fafe home, as his was in readinefs.

Fury started into her eyes, and passion inslamed every feature, as she answered, "Pardi, no—you may take care of yourself, if you please; but as to me, I promise you I sha'n't trust myself with no such person."

He pretended not to comprehend her meaning; yet, to wave a discussion, acquiesced in her resusal. The coach-party fixed upon, consisted of Madame Duval, M. Du Bois, Miss Branghton, and myself.

I now began to rejoice, in private, that at least our lodgings would be neither seen nor known by Sir Clement. We soon met with an hackney-coach, into which he handed me, and then took leave.

Madame Duval having already given the coachman her direction, he mounted the box, and we were just driving off, when Sir Clement exclaimed, "By Heaven, this is the very coach I had in waiting for myself."

44 This

"This coach, your honour!" faid the man; no, that it i'n't."

Sir Clement, however, fwore that it was; and prefently, the man, begging his pardon, faid he had

really forgotten that he was engaged.

I have no doubt but that this scheme occurred to him at the moment, and that he made some sign to the coachman, which induced him to support it: for there is not the least probability that the accident really happened, as it is most likely his own chariot

was in waiting.

The man then opened the coach-door, and Sir Clement advancing to it, faid, "I don't believe there is another carriage to be had, or I would not incommode you; but as it may be difagreeable to you to wait here any longer, I beg you will not get out, for you shall be fet down before I am carried home, if you will be so good as to make a little room.

And so faying, in he jumped, and seated himself between M. Du Bois and me, while our astonishment at the whole transaction was too great for speech. He then ordered the coachman to drive on, according to the directions he had already received.

For the first ten minutes no one uttered a word; and then, Madame Duval, no longer able to contain herself, exclaimed, "Ma foi, if this isn't one

of the impudentest things ever I see!"

Sir Clement, regardless of this rebuke, attended only to me; however, I answered nothing he said, when I could possibly avoid so doing. Miss Branghton made several attempts to attract his notice, but in vain, for he would not take the trouble of paying her any regard.

Madame Duval, during the rest of the ride, addressed herself to M. Du Bois in French, and in that language exclaimed, with great vehemence,

against boldness and affurance.

I was extremely glad when I thought our journey ney must be nearly at an end, for my situation was very uneasy to me, as Sir Clement perpetually endeavoured to take my hand. I looked out of the coach-window, to see if we were near home: Sir Clement, stooping over me, did the same; and then, in a voice of infinite wonder, called out, "Where the d—l is the man driving to?——Why, we are in Broad St. Giles's!"

"O, he's very right," cried Madame Duval, "fo never trouble your head about that; for I sha'n't go

by no directions of your's, I promise you."

When, at last, we stopped at an Hosier's in High Holborn,—Sir Clement said nothing, but his eyes, I saw, were very bussly employed in viewing the place, and the situation of the house. The coach, he said, belonged to him, and therefore he insisted upon paying for it; and then he took leave. M. Du Bois walked home with Miss Branghton, and Madame Duval and I retired to our apartments.

How disagreeable an evening's adventure! not one of the party seemed satisfied, except Sir Clement, who was in high spirits: but Madame Duval was enraged at meeting with him; Mr. Branghton, angry with his children; the frolic of the Miss Branghtons had exceeded their plan, and ended in their own distress; their brother was provoked that there had been no riot; Mr. Brown was tired, and Mr. Smith mortised. As to myself, I must acknowledge, nothing could be more disagreeable to me, than being seen by Sir Clement Willoughby with a party at once so vulgar in themselves, and so familiar to me.

And you, too, my dear Sir, will, I know, be forry that I have met him; however, there is no apprehension of his visiting here, as Madame Duval is

far too angry to admit him.

#### LETTER II.

EVELINA in Continuation.

Holborn, June 18th.

MADAME Duval rose very late this morning, and, at one o'clock, we had but just breakfasted, when Miss Branghton, her brother, Mr. Smith, and Monsieur Du Bois, called to inquire after our healths.

This civility in young Branghton, I much sufpect, was merely the result of his father's commands; but his sister and Mr. Smith, I soon found, had motives of their own. Scarce had they spoken to Madame Duval, when, advancing eagerly to me, "Pray, Ma'am," said Mr. Smith, "who was that gentleman?"

" Pray, Cousin," cried Miss Branghton, " was not he the same gentleman you ran away with that

night at the opera?"

"Goodness! that he was," said young Branghton; "and, I declare, as soon as ever I saw him,

I thought I knew his face."

"I'm fure I'll defy you to forget him," answered his sister, if once you had seen him: he is the finest gentleman I ever saw in my life; don't you think so, Mr. Smith?"

"Why, you won't give the Lady time to fpeak," faid Mr. Smith.—" Pray, Ma'am, what is the gen-

tleman's name?"

" Willoughby, Sir."

" Willoughby! I think I have heard the name.

Pray, Ma'am, is he married?"

"Lord, no, that he is not," cried Miss Branghton; "he looks too smart by a great deal for a married man. Pray, Cousin, how did you get acquainted with him?"

"Pray, Mifs," faid young Branghton, in the

fame breath, "what's his business?"

" Indeed

"Indeed I don't know," answered I.

"Something very genteel, I dare fay," added Miss Branghton, "because he dresses so fine."

"It ought to be fomething that brings in a good income," faid Mr. Smith; "for I'm fure he did not get that fuit of clothes he had on under thirty or forty pounds; for I know the price of clothes pretty well:—Pray, Ma'am, can you tell me what he has a-year?"

"Don't talk no more about him," cried Madame Duval, "for I don't like to hear his name: I believe he's one of the worst persons in the world; for though I never did him no manner of harm, nor so much as hurt a hair of his head, I know he was an accomplice with that fellow, Captain Mirvan,

to take away my life."

Every body but myself, now crowding around her for an explanation, a violent rapping at the street-door was unheard; and, without any previous notice, in the midst of her narration, Sir Clement Willoughby entered the room. They all started, and, with looks of guilty consusting, as if they feared his resentment for having listened to Madame Duval, they scrambled for chairs, and in a moment were all formally seated.

Sir Clement, after a general bow, fingling out Madame Duval, faid, with his usual easiness, "I have done myself the honour of waiting on you, Madam, to inquire if you have any commands to Howard Grove, whither I am going to-morrow morning."

Then, feeing the storm that gathered in her eyes, before he allowed her time to answer, he addressed himself to me;—" And if you, Madam, have any with which you will honour me, I shall be happy to execute them."

" None at all, Sir."

"None!—not to Mifs Mirvan!—no meffage! no letter!"

"I wrote to Miss Mirvan yesterday by the post."
"My

"My application should have been earlier, had

I fooner known your address."

"Ma foi," cried Madame Duval, recovering from her furprife, "I believe never nobody faw the like of this!"

"Of what, Madam!" cried the undaunted Sir Clement, turning quick towards her; "I hope no

one has offended you!"

"You don't hope no fuch a thing!" cried she, half choaked with passion, and rising from her chair. This motion was followed by the rest; and, in a

moment, every body stood up.

Still Sir Clement was not abashed; affecting to make a bow of acknowledgment to the company in general, he said, "Pray—I beg—Ladies,—Gentlemen,—pray don't let me disturb you, pray keep your seats."

"Pray, Sir," faid Miss Branghton, moving a chair towards him, "won't you sit down yourself?"

"You are extremely good, Ma'am: - rather than

make any disturbance-

And fo faying, this strange man seated himself, as did in an instant every body else, even Madame Duval herself, who, overpowered by his boldness, seemed too full for utterance.

He then, and with as much composure as if he had been an expected guest, began to discourse on the weather, its uncertainty,—the heat of the public places in summer,—the emptiness of the town,—

and other fuch common topics.

Nobody, however, answered him; Mr. Smith feemed asraid, young Branghton ashamed, M. Du Bois amazed, Madame Duval enraged, and myself determined not to interfere. All that he could obtain, was the notice of Miss Branghton, whose nods, smiles, and attention, had some appearance of entering into conversation with him.

At length, growing tired, I suppose, of engaging every body's eyes, and nobody's tongue, addressing

himself

himself to Madame Duval and to me, he said, "I regard myself as peculiarly unfortunate, Ladies, in having fixed upon a time for my visit to Howard

Grove, when you are absent from it."

"So I fuppose, Sir, so I suppose," cried Madame Duval, hastily rising, and the next moment as hastily feating herself;—"you'll be a wanting of somebody to make your game of, and so you may think to get me there again;—but, I promise you, Sir, you won't find it so easy a matter to make me a fool: and besides that," raising her voice, "I've found you out, I assure you; so if ever you go to play your tricks upon me again, I'll make no more ado, but go directly to a justice of peace; so, Sir, if you can't think of nothing but making people ride about the country at all hours of the night, just for your diversion, why, you'll find I know some justices as well as Justice Tyrell."

Sir Clement was evidently embarraffed at this attack; yet he affected a look of furprife, and pro-

tested he did not understand her meaning.

"Well," cried she, "if I don't wonder where people can get such impudence! if you'll say that, you'll say any thing: however, if you swear till you're black in the sace, I sha'n't believe you; for nobody sha'n't persuade me out of my senses, that I'm resolved."

"Doubtless not, Madam," answered he with fome hesitation; "and I hope you do not suspect I ever had such an intention; my respect for you—"

"O, Sir, you are vaftly polite all of a fudden! but I know what it's all for;—it's only for what you can get!—You could treat me like nobody at Howard Grove;—but now you fee I've a house of my own, you've a mind to wheedle yourself into it; but I fees your design, so you needn't trouble yourself to take no more trouble about that, for you shall never get nothing at my house,—not so much as a dish of tea:—so now, Sir, you see I can play you trick for trick."

There was fomething fo extremely gross in this fpeech, that it even disconcerted Sir Clement, who was too much confounded to make any answer.

It was curious to observe the effect which his embarrassiment, added to the freedom with which Madame Duval addressed him, had upon the rest of the company. Every one, who before seemed at a loss how, or if at all, to occupy a chair, now silled it with the most easy composure: and Mr. Smith, whose countenance had exhibited the most striking picture of mortissed envy, now began to recover his usual expression of satisfied conceit. Young Branghton, too, who had been apparently awed by the presence of so sine a gentleman, was again himself, rude and samiliar; while his mouth was wide distended into a broad grin, at hearing his aunt give the beau such a trimming.

Madame Duval, encouraged by this fuccess, looked around her with an air of triumph, and continued her harangue. "And so, Sir, I suppose you thought to have had it all your own way, and to have comed here as often as you pleased, and to have got me to Howard Grove again on purpose to have served me as you did before; but you shall see I'm as cunning as you: so you may go and find somebody else to use in that manner, and to put your mask on, and to make a fool of; for as to me, if you go to tell me your stories about the Tower again, for a month together, I'll never believe them no more: and I'll promise you, Sir, if you think

I tike fuch jokes, you'll find I'm no fuch perfon."

"I affure you, Ma'am,—upon my honour,—I really don't comprehend—I fancy there is fome mifunderstanding—"

"What, I suppose you'll tell me next you don't know nothing of the matter?"

"Not a word, upon my honour."

O, Sir Clement, thought I, is it thus you prize your honour!

" Pardi," cried Madame Duval, " this is the most provokingest part of all! why, you might as well tell me I don't know my own name."

" Here is certainly fome mistake; for I affure

you, Ma'am-

" Don't affure me nothing," cried Madame Duval, raising her voice; "I know what I'm faying, and fo do you too; for did not you tell me all that about the Tower, and about M. Du Bois?-why, M. Du Bois wasn't never there, nor nigh it, and fo it was all your own invention.'

" May there not be two perfons of the fame

name? the mistake was but natural."

"Don't tell me of no mistake, for it was all on purpose: besides, did not you come, all in a mask, to the chariot-door, and help to get me put in that ditch ?-I'll promise you, I've had the greatest mind in the world to take the law of you ever fince; and if ever you do as much again, fo I will, I affure you!"

Here Miss Branghton tittered, Mr. Smith smiled contemptuously, and young Branghton thrust his handkerchief into his mouth to stop his laughter.

The fituation of Sir Clement, who faw all that paffed, became now very awkward, even to himfelf, and he stammered very much in faying, "Surely, Madam-furely you-you cannot do me the-the injustice to think-that I had any share in the-thethe misfortune which-"

" Ma foi, Sir," cried Madame Duval, with increafing paffion, "you'd best not stand talking to me at that rate: I know it was you; and if you stay there, a provoking me in such a manner, I'll

fend for a constable this minute."

Young Branghton, at these words, in spite of all his efforts, burst into a loud laugh; nor could either his fifter or Mr. Smith, though with more moderation, forbear joining in his mirth.

Sir Clement darted his eyes towards them with looks looks of the most angry contempt; and then told Madame Duval, that he would not now detain her to make his vindication, but would wait on her some time when she was alone.

"O Pardi, Sir," cried she, "I don't desire none of your company; and if you wasn't the most boldest person in the world, you would not dare look me in the face."

The ha, ha, ha's! and he, he, he's! grew more and more uncontrollable, as if the restraint, from which they had burst, had added to their violence. Sir Clement could no longer endure being the object who excited them; and, having no answer ready for Madame Duval, he hastily stalked towards Mr. Smith and young Branghton, and sternly demanded what they laughed at?

Struck by the air of importance which he affurned, and alarmed at the angry tone of his voice, their merriment ceased as instantaneously as if it had been directed by clock-work; and they stared foolishly, now at him, now at each other, without making any answer but a simple "Nothing, Sir."

"O pour le coup," cried Madame Duval, "this is too much! Pray, Sir, what business have you to come here a ordering people that comes to see me. I suppose next nobody must laugh but yourself!"

"With me, Madam," faid Sir Clement, bowing, "a lady may do any thing, and confequently there is no liberty in which I shall not be happy to indulge you:—but it has never been my custom to give the same licence to gentlemen."

Then, advancing to me, who had fat very quietly on a window during this scene, he faid, "Miss Anville, I may at least acquaint our friends at Howard Grove that I had the honour of leaving you in good health." And then, lowering his voice, he added, "For Heaven's sake, my dearest creature, who are these people? and how came you so strangely situated?"

193

that

rely \_th

he-

110

ig to

of all

dera-

looks

"I beg my respects to all the family, Sir," anfwered I aloud; "and I hope you will find them well."

He looked at me reproachfully, but kiffed my hand; and then, bowing to Madame Duval and Miss Branghton, passed hastily by the men, and made his exit.

I fancy he will not be very eager to repeat his vifits; for I should imagine he has rarely, if ever, been before in a situation so awkward and disagreeable.

Madame Duval has been all spirits and exultation ever since he went, and only wishes Captain Mirvan would call, that she might do the same by him. Mr. Smith, upon hearing that he was a baronet, and seeing him drive off in a very beautiful chariot, declared that he would not have laughed upon any account, had he known his rank; and regretted extremely having missed such an opportunity of making so genteel an acquaintance. Young Branghton vowed, that, if he had known as much, he would have asked for his custom; and his sister has sung his praises ever since, protesting she thought all along he was a man of quality by his look.

### LETTER III.

EVELINA in Continuation.

June 21.

THE last three evenings have passed tolerably quiet, for the Vauxhall adventures had given Madame Duval a surfeit of public places: home, however, soon growing tiresome, she determined tonight, she said, to relieve her ennui by some amusement; and it was therefore settled, that we should call upon the Branghtons at their house, and thence proceed to Marybone Gardens.

But, before we reached Snow Hill, we were caught in a shower of rain: we hurried into the

shop,

shop, where the first object I saw was Mr. Macartney, with a book in his hand, seated in the same corner where I saw him last; but his looks were still more wretched than before, his sace yet thinner, and his eyes sunk almost hollow into his head. He listed them up as we entered, and I even thought that they emitted a gleam of joy: involuntarily I made to him my first courtesy; he rose and bowed with a precipitation that manifested surprise and confusion.

In a few minutes we were joined by all the family, except Mr. Smith, who fortunately was engaged.

Had all the future prosperity of our lives depended upon the good or bad weather of this evening, it could not have been treated as a subject of greater importance. "Sure never any thing was so unlucky!"—"Lord, how provoking!"—"It might rain for ever, if it would hold up now."—These, and such expressions, with many anxious observations upon the kennels, filled up all the conversation till the shower was over.

And then a very warm debate arose, whether we should pursue our plan, or defer it to some finer evening. The Miss Branghtons were for the former; their father was sure it would rain again; Madame Duval, though she detested returning home, yet dreaded the dampness of the gardens.

M. Du Bois then proposed going to the top of the house, to examine whether the clouds looked threatening or peaceable: Miss Branghton starting at this proposal, said they might go to Mr. Macartney's room if they would, but not to her's.

This was enough for the brother; who, with a loud laugh, declared he would have fome fun; and immediately led the way, calling to us all to follow. His fifters both ran after, but no one else moved.

In a few minutes young Branghton, coming half way down stairs, called out, "Lord, why don't you all come? why, here's Poll's things all about the room!"

Mr. Branghton then went; and Madame Duval, who cannot bear to be excluded from whatever is going forward, was handed up stairs by M. Du Bois.

I hesitated a few moments whether or not to join them; but, foon perceiving that Mr. Macartney had dropped his book, and that I engroffed his whole attention, I prepared, from mere embarrassment, to

follow them.

As I went, I heard him move from his chair and walk flowly after me. Believing that he wished to fpeak to me, and earnestly defiring myself to know if, by your means, I could possibly be of any service to him, I first slackened my pace, and then turned back. But, though I thus met him half-way, he feemed to want courage or resolution to address me; for, when he faw me returning, with a look extremely disordered, he retreated hastily from me.

Not knowing what I ought to do, I went to the street-door, where I stood some time, hoping he would be able to recover himfelf; but, on the contrary, his agitation increased every moment; he walked up and down the room in a quick but unsteady pace, seeming equally distressed and irresolute; and at length, with a deep figh, he flung himfelf

into a chair.

I was fo much affected by the appearance of fuch extreme anguish, that I could remain no longer in the room: I therefore glided by him, and went up stairs; but, ere I had gone five steps, he precipitately followed me, and, in a broken voice, called out,

" Madam!—for Heaven's fake—"

He stopped; but I instantly descended, restraining, as well as I was able, the fullness of my own concern. I waited some time, in painful expectation, for his speaking: all that I had heard of his poverty occurring to me, I was upon the point of prefenting him my purse; but the fear of mistaking or offending him, deterred me. Finding, however, that he continued filent, I ventured to fay, "Did you-Sir, with to speak to me?" " I. did,"

"I did," cried he with quickness, "but now—I cannot!—"

"Perhaps, Sir, another time,—perhaps if you recollect yourfelf——"

"Another time!" repeated he mournfully; "alas! I look not forward but to mifery and despair!"

"O, Sir," cried I extremely shocked, "you must not talk thus!—if you forsake yourself, how can you expect—"

I stopped. "Tell me, tell me," cried he with eagerness, who you are?—whence you come?—and by what strange means you seem to be arbitress and ruler of the destiny of such a wretch as I am?"

"Would to Heaven," cried I, "I could ferve

you!"

" You can!"

" And how? Pray, tell me how?"

"To tell you is death to me! yet I will tell you, —I have a right to your affiltance,—you have deprived me of the only resource to which I could apply,—and therefore—"

"Pray, pray speak," cried I, putting my hand into my pocket; "they will be down stairs in a

moment!"

"I will, Madam,—Can you—will you—I think you will!—may I then"—he stopped and paused; "fay, will you"—then suddenly turning from me, "Great Heaven, I cannot speak!" and he went back to the shop.

I now put my purse in my hand, and following him, said, "If, indeed, Sir, I can assist you, why should you deny me so great a satisfaction? Will

you permit me to-"

I dared not go on; but with a countenance very much foftened, he approached me, and faid "Your voice, Madam, is the voice of compassion!—such a voice as these ears have long been strangers to!"

Just then young Branghton called out vehemently to me to come up stairs. I seized the op-

portunity

portunity of hastening away: and therefore faying, "Heaven, Sir, protect and comfort you!" I let fall my purse upon the ground, not daring to prefent it to him, and ran up stairs with the utmost fwistness.

Too well do I know you, my ever honoured Sir, to fear your displeasure for this action: I must, however, assure you I shall need no fresh supply during my stay in town, as I am at little expense, and hope soon to return to Howard Grove.

Soon, did I say! when not a fortnight is yet expired of the long and tedious month I must linger

out here!

I had many witticisms to endure from the Branghtons, upon account of my staying so long with the Scotch mope, as they call him; but I attended to them very little, for my whole heart was filled with pity and concern. I was very glad to find the Marybone scheme was deserved, another shower of rain having put a stop to the dissension upon this subject; the rest of the evening was employed in most violent quarrelling between Miss Polly and her brother, on account of the discovery made by the latter of the state of her apartment.

We came home early; and I have stolen from Madame Duval and M. Du Bois, who is here for ever,

to write to my best friend.

I am most fincerely rejoiced, that this opportunity has offered for my contributing what little relief was in my power to this unhappy man; and I hope it will be sufficient to enable him to pay his debts to this pitiles family.

# LETTER IV.

Mr. VILLARS to EVELINA.

Berry Hill.

DISPLEASURE? my Evelina!—you have but done your duty; you have but shown that humanity with-

without which I should blush to own my child. It is mine, however, to see that your generosity be not repressed by your suffering from indulging it; I remit to you, therefore, not merely a token of my approbation, but an acknowledgment of my desire

to participate in your charity.

his creditor.

O my child, were my fortune equal to my confidence in thy benevolence, with what transport should I, through thy means, devote it to the relief of indigent virtue! yet let us not repine at the limitation of our power; for while our bounty is proportioned to our ability, the difference of the greater or less donation can weigh but little in the scale of instice.

In reading your account of the misguided man, whose misery has so largely excited your compassion, I am led to apprehend, that his unhappy situation is less the effect of misfortune than of misconduct. If he is reduced to that state of poverty represented by the Branghtons, he should endeavour, by activity and industry, to retrieve his affairs, and not pass his time in idle reading in the very shop of

The pistol scene made me shudder: the courage with which you pursued this desperate man, at once delighted and terrified me. Be ever thus, my dearest Evelina, dauntless in the cause of distress! let no weak sears, no timid doubts, deter you from the exertion of your duty, according to the fullest sense of it that Nature has implanted in your mind. Though gentleness and modesty are the peculiar attributes of your sex, yet fortitude and firmness, when occasion demands them, are virtues as noble and as becoming in women as in men: the right line of conduct is the same for both sexes, though the manner in which it is pursued may somewhat vary, and be accommodated to the strength or weak-

There is, however, fomething fo mysterious in

ness of the different travellers.

all you have yet feen or heard of this wretched man, that I am unwilling to stamp a bad impreffion of his character upon so slight and partial a knowledge of it. Where any thing is doubtful, the ties of society, and the laws of humanity, claim a favourable interpretation; but remember, my dear child, that those of discretion have an equal claim

to your regard.

As to Sir Clement Willoughby, I know not how to express my indignation at his conduct. Insolence so insufferable, and the implication of suspicions so shocking, irritate me to a degree of wrath, which I hardly thought my almost worn-out passions were capable of again experiencing. You must converse with him no more: he imagines, from the pliability of your temper, that he may offend you with impunity; but his behaviour justifies, nay, calls for your avowed resentment: do not, therefore, hesitate in forbidding him your fight.

The Branghtons, Mr. Smith, and young Brown, however ill-bred and difagreeable, are objects too contemptible for ferious displeasure: yet I grieve much that my Evelina should be exposed to their

rudeness and impertinence.

The very day that this tedious month expires, I shall send Mrs. Clinton to town, who will accompany you to Howard Grove. Your stay there will, I hope, be short; for I feel daily an increasing impatience to fold my beloved child to my bosom!

ARTHUR VILLARS.

### LETTER V.

EVELINA to the Rev. Mr. VILLARS.

Holborn, June 27.

I HAVE just received, my dearest Sir, your kind present, and still kinder letter. Surely never had orphan so little to regret as your grateful Evelina!

lina! Though motherless, though worse than fatherless, berest from infancy of the two first and greatest blessings of life, never has she had cause to deplore their loss; never has she felt the omission of a parent's tenderness, care or indulgence; never, but from forrow for them, had reason to grieve at the separation! Most thankfully do I receive the token of your approbation, and most studiously will I endeavour so to dispose of it, as may merit your generous considence in my conduct.

Your doubts concerning Mr. Macartney give me fome uneafiness. Indeed, Sir, he has not the appearance of a man whose forrows are the effect of guilt. But I hope, before I leave town, to be better acquainted with his situation, and enabled, with more certainty of his worth, to recommend him to

your favour.

I am very willing to relinquish all acquaintance with Sir Clement Willoughby, as far as it may depend upon myself so to do; but, indeed, I know not how I should be able to absolutely forbid him my

fight.

Miss Mirvan, in her last letter, informs me that he is now at Howard Grove, where he continues in high favour with the Captain, and is the life and spirit of the house. My time, since I wrote last, has passed very quietly; Madame Duval having been kept at home by a bad cold, and the Branghtons by bad weather. The young man, indeed, has called two or three times; and his behaviour, though equally absurd, is more unaccountable than ever; he speaks very little, takes hardly any notice of Madame Duval, and never looks at me without a broad grin. Sometimes he approaches me, as if with intention to communicate intelligence of importance; and then suddenly stopping short, laughs rudely in my face.

O how happy shall I be, when the worthy Mrs.

Clinton arrives!

Yesterday

June 29th:

Yesterday morning, Mr. Smith called, to acquaint us, that the Hampstead assembly was to be held that evening; and then he presented Madame Duval with one ticket, and brought another to me. I thanked him for his intended civility, but told him I was surprised he had so soon forgotten my having already declined going to the ball.

"Lord, Ma'am," cried he, "how should I suppose you was in earnest? come, come, don't be cross; here's your Grandmama ready to take care of you, so you can have no fair objection, for she'll see that I don't run away with you. Besides,

Ma'am, I got the tickets on purpose."

"If you were determined, Sir," faid I, "in making me this offer, to allow me no choice of refusal or acceptance, I must think myself less obliged to your intention than I was willing to do."

"Dear Ma'am," cried he, "you're fo finart, there is no fpeaking to you;—indeed you are monstrous smart, Ma'am! but come, your Grandmama shall ask you, and then I know you'll not be so cruel."

Madame Duval was very ready to interfere; she desired me to make no further opposition, said she should go herself, and insisted upon my accompanying her. It was in vain that I remonstrated; I only incurred her anger: and Mr. Smith, having given both the tickets to Madame Duval with an air of triumph, said he should call early in the evening; and took leave.

I was much chagrined at being thus compelled to owe even the shadow of an obligation to so forward a young man; but I determined that nothing should prevail upon me to dance with him, however my refusal might give offence.

In the afternoon, when he returned, it was evident that he purposed to both charm and assonish me by his appearance: he was dressed in a very showy manner, but without any taste; and the

inelegant

inelegant smartness of his air and deportment, his visible struggle against education to put on the fine gentleman, added to his frequent conscious glances at a dress to which he was but little accustomed, very effectually destroyed his aim of figuring, and rendered all his efforts useless.

During tea entered Miss Branghton and her brother. I was forrow to observe the consternation of the former, when she perceived Mr. Smith. I had intended applying to her for advice upon this occafion, but had been always deterred by her disagreeable abruptness. Having cast her eyes several times from Mr. Smith to me, with manifest displeasure, she seated herself fullenly in the window, scarce answering Madame Duval's inquiries; and when I spoke to her, turning absolutely away from me.

Mr. Smith, delighted at this mark of his importance, fat indolently quiet on his chair, endeavouring by his looks rather to difplay, than to conceal, his inward fatisfaction.

"Good gracious!" cried young Branghton, "why, you're all as fine as five-pence! Why, where are you going?"

"To the Hampstead ball," answered Mr. Smith.
"To a ball!" cried he, "Why, what, is Aunt going to a ball? Ha, ha, ha!"

"Yes, to be fure," cried Madame Duval; "I. don't know nothing need hinder me."

"And pray, Aunt, will you dance too?"

"Perhaps I may; but I suppose, Sir, that's none

of your business, whether I do or not."

"Lord! well, I should like to go! I should like to see Aunt dance, of all things! But the joke is, I don't believe she'll get ever a partner."

"You're the most rudest boy ever I see," cried Madame Duval angrily: "but, I promise you, I'll tell your father what you say, for I've no notion of such vulgarness."

"Why, Lord, Aunt, what are you fo angry for?" there's

there's no speaking a word, but you fly into a pasfion: you're as bad as Biddy or Poll for that, for vou're always a scolding."

"I desire, Tom," cried Miss Branghton, "you'd fpeak for yourfelf, and not make fo free with my

name."

"There, now, she's up! there's nothing but quarrelling with the women: it's my belief they like it better than victuals and drink."

"Fie, Tom," cried Mr. Smith, "you never remember your manners before the ladies: I'm fure

you never heard me speak fo rude to them."

"Why, Lord, you are a beau; but that's nothing to me. So, if you've a mind, you may be so polite as to dance with Aunt yourself." Then, with a loud laugh, he declared it would be good fun to fee them.

Let it be never so good, or never so bad," cried Madame Duval, "you wo'n't fee nothing of it, I promise you; so pray don't let me hear no more of such vulgar pieces of fun; for, I affure you, I don't like it. And as to my dancing with Mr. Smith, you may fee wonderfuller things than that any day in the week."

Why, as to that, Ma'am," faid Mr. Smith, looking much furprifed, "I always thought you intended to play at cards, and fo I thought to dance

with the young lady."

I gladly feized this opportunity to make my de-

claration, that I should not dance at all.

Not dance at all!" repeated Miss Branghton; " yes, that's a likely matter truly, when people go to balls."

" I wish she mayn't," faid the brother; "'cause then Mr. Smith will have nobody but Aunt for a: partner. Lord, how mad he'll be!"

"O, as to that," faid Mr. Smith, "I don't at all fear prevailing with the young lady, if once I get

her to the room.

"Indeed, Sir," cried I, much offended by his conceit "you are mistaken; and therefore I beg leave

leave to undeceive you, as you may be affured my resolution will not alter."

"Then, pray, Miss, if it is not impertinent," cried Miss Branghton sneeringly, "what do you go for?"
"Merely and solely," answered I, "to comply

with the request of Madame Duval."

"Miss," cried young Branghton, "Bid only wishes it was she, for she has cast a sheep's eye at Mr. Smith this long while."

"Tom," cried the fifter, rifing, "I've the greatest mind in the world to box your ears! How dare

you fay fuch a thing of me?"

"No, hang it, Tom, no, that's wrong," faid Mr. Smith, simpering; "it is indeed, to tell the lady's fecrets.—But never mind him, Miss Biddy, for I won't believe him."

"Why, I know Bid would give her ears to go," returned the brother; " but only Mr. Smith likes

Miss best, -fo does every body else."

While the fifter gave him a very angry answer, Mr. Smith faid to me in a low voice, "Why now, Ma'am, how can you be fo cruel as to be fo much handsomer than your cousins? Nobody can look at

them when you are by."

"Miss," cried young Branghton, "whatever he fays to you don't mind him, for he means no good; I'll give you my word for it, he'll never marry you; for he has told me again and again, he'll never marry as long as he lives; besides, if he'd any mind to be married, there's Bid would have had him long ago, and thanked him too."

"Come, come, Tom, don't tell fecrets; you'll make the ladies afraid of me : but I affure you," lowering his voice, "if I did marry, it should be

your cousin."

Should be !---did you ever, my dear Sir, hear fuch unauthorifed freedom? I looked at him with a contempt I did not wish to repress, and walked to the other end of the room.

Very foon after Mr. Smith fent for a hackney-When I would have taken leave of Miss Branghton, she turned angrily from me, without making any answer. She supposes, perhaps, that I have rather fought, than endeavoured to avoid, the notice and civilities of this conceited young man.

The ball was at the long room at Hampstead.

This room feems very well named, for I believe it would be difficult to find any other epithet which might with propriety distinguish it, as it is without ornament, elegance, or any fort of fingularity, and merely to be marked by its length.

I was faved from the importunities of Mr. Smith the beginning of the evening, by Madame Duval's declaring her intention to dance the two first dances with him herfelf. Mr. Smith's chagrin was very evident; but as she paid no regard to it, he was neceffitated to lead her out.

I was, however, by no means pleafed, when fhe faid the was determined to dance a minuet. Indeed, I was quite aftonished, not having had the least idea, she would have consented to, much less proposed, such an exhibition of her person. She had some trouble to make her intentions known, as Mr. Smith was rather averse to speaking with the master of the ceremonies.

During this minuet, how much did I rejoice in being furrounded only with strangers! She danced in a style so uncommon; her age, her showy dress, and an unufual quantity of rouge, drew upon her the eyes, and I fear the derision, of the whole company. Who she danced with, I know not; but Mr. Smith was fo ill-bred as to laugh at her very openly, and to speak of her with as much ridicule as was in his power. But I would neither look at, nor listen to him, nor would I fuffer him to proceed with a fpeech, which he began, expressive of his vexation at being forced to dance with her. I told him, very gravely, that complaints upon fuch a fubject might,

with

with less impropriety, be made to every person in

the room than to me.

When she returned to us, she distressed me very much, by asking what I thought of her minuet. I spoke as civilly as I could; but the coldness of my compliment evidently disappointed her. She then called upon Mr. Smith to secure a good place among the country-dancers; and away they went, though not before he had taken the liberty to say to me in a low voice, "I protest to you, Ma'am, I shall be quite out of countenance, if any of my acquaintance should see me dancing with the old lady!"

For a few moments I very much rejoiced at being relieved from this troublesome man; but scarce had I time to congratulate myself, before I was accosted by another, who begged the favour of

hopping a dance with me.

I told him that I should not dance at all; but he thought proper to importune me, very freely, not to be so cruel; and I was obliged to assume no little haughtiness before I could satisfy him I was

ferious.

After this, I was addressed much in the same manner by several other young men; of whom the appearance and language were equally inelegant and low-bred: so that I soon found my situation was both disagreeable and improper; since, as I was quite alone, I fear I must seem rather to invite than to forbid, the offers and notice I received; and yet so great was my apprehension of this interpretation, that I am sure, my dear Sir, you would have laughed had you seen how proudly grave I appeared.

I knew not whether to be glad or forry, when Madame Duval and Mr. Smith returned. The latter inftantly renewed his tirefome entreaties, and Madame Duval faid fhe would go to the cardtable; and as foon as fhe was accommodated, she

defired us to join the dancers.

I will not trouble you with the arguments which followed. Mr. Smith teased me till I was weary of resistance; and I should at last have been obliged to submit, had I not fortunately recollected the affair of Mr. Lovel, and told my persecutor, that it was impossible I should dance with him, even if I wished it, as I had refused several persons in his absence.

He was not contented with being extremely chagrined; but took the liberty, openly and warmly, to exposulate with me upon not having said I

was engaged.

The total difregard with which, involuntarily, I heard him, made him foon change the fubject. In truth, I had no power to attend to him; for all my thoughts were occupied in re-tracing the transactions of the two former balls at which I had been present. The party—the conversation—the company—O how great the contrast!

In a short time, however, he contrived to draw my attention to himself, by his extreme impertinence; for he chose to express what he called his admiration of me, in terms so open and familiar, that he forced me to express my displeasure with

equal plainness.

But how was I furprised, when I found he had the temerity—what else can I call it?—to impute my resentment to doubts of his honour: for he said, "My dear Ma'am, you must be a little patient; I assure you I have no bad designs, I have not upon my word; but, really, there is no resolving upon such a thing as matrimony all at once; what with the loss of one's liberty, and what with the ridicule of all one's acquaintance,—I assure you, Ma'am, you are the first lady who ever made me even demur upon this subject; for, after all, my dear Ma'am, marriage is the devil!"

"Your opinion, Sir," answered I, " of either the married or the single life, can be of no manner of

consequence to me; and therefore I would by no means trouble you to discuss their different merits."

"Why, really, Ma'am, as to your being a little out of forts, I must own I can't wonder at it; for, to be sure, marriage is all in all with the ladies,; but with us, gentlemen, it's quite another thing! Now only put yourself in my place;—suppose you had such a large acquaintance of gentlemen as I have,—and that you had always been used to appear a little—a little smart among them,—why now, how should you like to let yourself down all at once into a married man?"

I could not tell what to answer; fo much conceit, and so much ignorance, both astonished and

filenced me.

"I affure you, Ma'am," added he, "there is not only Miss Biddy, —though I should have fcorned to mention her, if her brother had not blab'd, for I am quite particular in keeping ladies fccrets,—but there are a great many other ladies that have been proposed to me; —but I never thought twice of any of them, that is, not in a ferious way:—so you may very well be proud," offering to take my hand; "for I affure you, there is nobody so likely to catch me at last as yourself."

"Sir," cried I, drawing myself back as haughtily as I could, "you are totally mistaken, if you imagine you have given me any pride I selt not before, by this conversation; on the contrary, you must allow me to tell you, I find it too humi-

liating to bear with it any longer."

I then placed myself behind the chair of Madame Duval; who, when she heard of the partners I had refused, pitied my ignorance of the world, but no longer insisted upon my dancing.

Indeed, the extreme vanity of this man makes me exert a spirit which I did not, till now, know that I possessed: but I cannot endure that he should

think me at his disposal.

The rest of the evening passed very quietly, as Mr. Smith did not again attempt speaking to me; except, indeed, after we had lest the room, and while Madame Duval was seating herself in the coach, he said, in a voice of pique, "Next time I take the trouble to get any tickets for a young lady, I'll make a bargain beforehand, that she sha'n't turn me over to her grandmother."

We came home very fafe; and thus ended this fo long projected and most disagreeable affair.

### LETTER VI.

#### EVELINA in Continuation.

I HAVE just received a most affecting letter from Mr. Macartney. I will inclose it, my dear Sir, for your perusal. More than ever have I cause to rejoice that I was able to affist him.

# Mr. Macartney to Miss Anville.

Madam.

IMPRESSED with the deepest, the most heartfelts fense of the exalted humanity with which you have rescued from destruction an unhappy stranger, allow me, with the humblest gratitude, to offer you my fervent acknowledgments, and to implore your pardon for the terror I have caused you.

You bid me, Madam, live: I have now, indeed, a motive for life, fince I should not willingly quit the world, while I withhold from the needy and distressed any share of that charity which a disposition so noble would otherwise bestow upon them.

The benevolence with which you have interested yourself in my affairs, induces me to suppose you would wish to be acquainted with the cause of that desperation from which you snatched me, and the particulars of that misery of which you have so

wonder-

wonderfully been a witness. Yet, as this explanation will require that I should divulge secrets of a nature the most delicate, I must intreat you to regard them as secret, even though I forbear to mention the names of the parties concerned.

I was brought up in Scotland, though my mother, who had the fole care of me, was an Englishwoman, and had not one relation in that country. She devoted to me her whole time. The retirement in which we lived, and the distance from our natural friends, she often told me, were the effect of an unconquerable melancholy with which she was seized upon the sudden loss of my father, some time before I was born.

At Aberdeen, where I finished my education, I formed a friendship with a young man of fortune, which I considered as the chief happiness of my life:—but, when he quitted his studies, I considered it as my chief missortune; for he immediately prepared, by direction of his friends, to make the tour of Europe. As I was designed for the church, and had no prospect even of maintenance but from my own industry, I scarce dared permit even a wish of accompanying him. It is true, he would joyfully have borne my expenses: but my affection was as free from meanness as his own; and I made a determination the most solution, never to lessen its dignity by submitting to pecuniary obligations.

We corresponded with great regularity, and the most unbounded confidence, for the space of two years, when he arrived at Lyons in his way home.

He wrote me thence the most pressing invitation to meet him at Paris, where he intended to remain some time. My desire to comply with his request, and shorten our absence, was so earnest, that my mother, too indulgent to control me, lent me what assistance was in her power, and, in an ill-sated moment, I set out for that capital.

My meeting with this dear friend was the happiest event of my life: he introduced me to all his acquaintance; and fo quickly did time feem to pass at that delightful period, that the fix weeks I had allotted for my flay were gone, ere I was fensible I had miffed fo many days. But I must now own, that the company of my friend was not the fole fubject of my felicity: I became acquainted with a young lady, daughter of an Englishman of distinction, with whom I formed an attachment, which I have a thousand times vowed, a thousand times fincerely thought, would be lafting as my life. She had but just quitted a convent, in which she had been placed when a child; and though English by birth, fhe could fearcely fpeak her native language. Her perfon and disposition were equally engaging; but chiefly I adored her for the greatness of the expectations which, for my fake, the was willing to relign.

When the time for my residence at Paris expired, I was almost distracted at the idea of quitting her; yet I had not the courage to make our attachment known to her sather, who might reasonably form for her such views as would make him reject, with a contempt which I could not bear to think of, such an offer as mine. Yet I had free access to the house, where she seemed to be left almost wholly to the guidance of an old servant, who

was my fast friend.

But, to be brief, the sudden and unexpected return of her father one satal afternoon, proved the beginning of the misery which has ever since devoured me. I doubt not but he had listened to our conversation; for he darted into the room with the rage of a madman. Heavens! what a scene followed!—what abusive language did the shame of a clandestine affair, and the consciousness of acting ill, induce me to brook! At length, however, his sury exceeded my patience,—he called me a beggarly, cowardly Scotchman. Fired at the words, I

drew

drew my fword; he, with equal alertness drew his; for he was not an old man, but, on the contrary strong and able as myself. In vain his daughter pleaded;—in vain did I, repentant of my anger, retreat—his reproaches continued; myself, my country, were loaded with infamy, till, no longer constraining my rage,—we fought, and he fell!

At that moment I could almost have destroyed myself! The young lady fainted with terror; the old servant, drawn to us by the noise of the scussle, entreated me to escape, and promised to bring intelligence of what should pass to my apartment. The disturbance which I heard raised in the house obliged me to comply; and, in a state of mind in-

conceivably wretched, I tore myfelf away.

My friend, whom I found at home, foon discovered the whole affair. It was near midnight before the woman came. She told me that her mafter was living, and her young mistress restored to her fenses. The absolute necessity for my leaving Paris, while any danger remained, was forcibly urged by my friend: the servant promised to acquaint him of whatever passed, and he to transmit to me her information. Thus circumstanced, with the assistance of this dear friend I effected my departure from Paris; and not long after, I returned to Scotland. I would fain have stopped by the way, that I might have been nearer the scene of all my concerns; but the low state of my finances denied me that satisfaction.

The miferable fituation of my mind was foon discovered by my mother; nor would she rest till I communicated the cause. She heard my whole story with an agitation which astonished me;—the name of the parties concerned seemed to strike her with horror:—but when I said, We fought, and he fell:—"My son," cried she, "you have then murdered your father!" and she sunk breathless at my feet. Comments, Madam, upon such a scene

as this, would to you be fuperfluous, and to me agonizing: I cannot, for both our fakes, be too concife. When she recovered, she confessed all the particulars of a tale which she had hoped never to have revealed.—Alas! the loss she had sustained of my father was not by death!—bound to her by no ties but those of honour, he had voluntarily deferted her!—Her settling in Scotland was not the effect of choice,—she was banished thither by a family but too justly incensed.—Pardon, Madam, that I cannot be more explicit!

My fenses, in the greatness of my misery, acqually forfook me, and, for more than a week, I was wholly delirious. My unfortunate mother was yet more to be pitied; for she pined with unmitigated forrow, eternally reproaching herfelf for the danger to which her too frict filence had exposed me. When I recovered my reason, my impatience to hear from Paris almost deprived me of it again; and though the length of time I waited for letters might justly be attributed to contrary winds, I could not bear the delay, and was twenty times upon the point of returning thither at all hazards. At length, however, feveral letters arrived at once, and from the most insupportable of my afflictions I was then relieved; for they acquainted me that the horrors of parricide were not in referve for me. They informed me also, that as soon as the wound was

with whom the was to live.

This intelligence fomewhat quieted the violence of my forrows. I instantly formed a plan of meeting them in London, and, by revealing the whole dreadful story, convincing this irritated parent that he had nothing more to apprehend from his daughter's unfortunate choice. My mother confented, and gave me a letter to prove the truth of my aftertions. As I could but ill afford to make this jour-

healed, a journey would be made to England, where my unhappy fifter was to be received by an aunt.

ney, I travelled in the cheapest way that was posfible. I took an obscure lodging, I need not, Madam, tell you where,—and boarded with the people of the house.

Here I languished week after week, vainly hoping for the arrival of my family; but my impetuolity had blinded me, to the imprudence of which I was guilty in quitting Scotland so hastily. My wounded tather, after his recovery, relapsed; and when I had waited in the most comfortless situation for six weeks, my friend wrote me word, that the journey was yet deferred for some time longer.

My finances were then nearly exhausted; and I was obliged, though most unwillingly, to beg further assistance from my mother, that I might return to Scotland. Oh, Madam!—my answer was not yet from herself;—it was written by a lady who had long been her companion, and acquainted me that she had been taken suddenly ill of a fever,—and was no more!

The compassionate nature of which you have given such noble proofs, assures me I need not, if I could, paint to you the anguish of a mind overwhelmed with such accumulated forrows.

Inclosed was a letter to a near relation, which she had, during her illness, with much difficulty, written; and in which, with the strongest maternal tenderness, she described my deplorable situation, and intreated his interest to procure me some preferment. Yet so sunk was I by missortune, that a fortnight elapsed before I had the courage or spirit to attempt delivering this letter. I was then compelled to it by want. To make my appearance with some decency, I was necessitated myself to the melancholy task of changing my coloured clothes for a suit of mourning;—and then I proceeded to seek my relation.

I was informed that he was not in town.

In this desperate situation, the pride of my heart, which

which hitherto had not bowed to adverfity, gave way; and I determined to intreat the affiftance of my friend, whose offered services I had a thousand times rejected. Yet, Madam, so hard is it to root from the mind its savourite principles or prejudices, call them which you please, that I lingered another week ere I had the resolution to send away a letter which I regarded as the death of my inde-

pendence.

At length, reduced to my last shilling, dunned insolently by the people of the house, and almost famished, I sealed this fatal letter; and, with a heavy heart, determined to take it to the post-office. But Mr. Branghton and his son suffered me not to pass through their shop with impunity; they insulted me grossly, and threatened me with imprisonment, if I did not immediately satisfy their demands. Stung to the soul, I bid them have but a day's patience, and slung from them in a state of mind too terrible for description.

My letter, which I now found would be received too late to fave me from difgrace, I tore into a thousand pieces; and scarce could I refrain from putting an instantaneous, an unlicensed, period to

my existence.

In this diforder of my fenses I formed the horrible plan of turning foot-pad; for which purpose I returned to my lodging, and collected whatever of my apparel I could part with; which I immediately fold, and with the profits purchased a brace of pistols, powder and shot. I hope, however, you will believe me, when I most folemnly assure you, my fole intention was to frighten the passengers I should assault with these dangerous weapons; which I had not loaded, but from a resolution,—a dreadful one, I own,—to save myself from an ignominious death if seized. And, indeed, I thought, that if I could but procure money sufficient to pay Mr. Branghton, and make a journey to Scotland, I should foon

Toon be able, by the public papers, to discover whom I had injured, and to make private retribution.

But, Madam, new to every species of villany, my perturbation was so great, that I could with difficulty support myself; yet the Branghtons ob-

ferved it not as I passed through the shop.

Here I stop:—what followed is better known to yourself. But no time can ever efface from my memory that moment, when, in the very action of preparing for my own destruction, or the lawless seizure of the property of others, you rushed into the room and arrested my arm!—It was indeed an awful moment!—the hand of Providence seemed to intervene between me and eternity: I beheld you as an angel!—I thought you dropt from the clouds.—The earth, indeed, had never before presented to my view a form so celestial!—What wonder, then, that a spectacle so associated was, appear too beautiful to be human?

And now, Madam, that I have performed this painful task, the more grateful one remains of rewarding, as far as is in my power, your generous goodness, by assuring you it shall not be thrown away. You have awakened me to a sense of the salse pride by which I have been actuated;—a pride which, while it scorned assistance from a friend, scrupled not to compel it from a stranger, though at the hazard of reducing that stranger to a situation as destitute as my own. Yet, oh! how violent was the struggle which tore my conssisting soul, ere I could persuade myself to profit by the benevolence which you were so evidently disposed to exert in my savour!

By means of a ring, the gift of my much-regretted mother, I have for the prefent latisfied Mr. Branghton; and, by means of your compassion, I hope to support myself either till I hear from my friend, to whom at length I have written, or till

the relation of my mother returns to town.

VOL. II.

To

To talk to you, Madam, of paying my debt, would be vain; I never can! the fervice you have done me exceeds all power of return: you have reflored me to my fentes; you have taught me to curb those passions which bereft me of them; and, since I cannot avoid calamity, to bear it as a man! An interposition so wonderfully circumstanced can never be recollected without benefit. Yet allow me to say, the pecuniary part of my obligation must be settled by my first ability.

I am, Madam, with the most profound respect,

and heart-felt gratitude,

Your obedient, and devoted humble fervant, J. MACARTNEY.

#### LETTER VII.

EVELINA in Continuation.

Holborn, July 1 .- 5 o'clock in the morning.

O SIR, what an adventure have I to write!—all night it has occupied my thoughts, and I am now rifen thus early to write it to you.

Yesterday it was settled that we should spend the evening in Marybone Gardens, where M. Torre, a celebrated foreigner, was to exhibit some fire-works. The party consisted of Madame Duval, all the Branghtons, M. Du Bois, Mr. Smith, and Mr. Brown.

We were almost the first persons who entered the Gardens, Mr. Branghton having declared he would have all he could get for his money, which, at best, was only sooled away at such filly and idle places.

We walked in parties, and very much detached from one another. Mr. Brown and Mifs Polly led the way by themselves; Miss Branghton and Mr. Smith followed; and the latter seemed determined to be revenged for my behaviour at the ball, by transferring all his former attention for me to Miss Branghton,

Branghton, who received it with an air of exultation: and very frequently they each of them, tho' from different motives, looked back, to discover whether I observed their good intelligence. Madame Duval walked with M. Du Bois, and Mr. Branghton by himself: but his son would willingly have attached himself wholly to me; saying frequently, "Come, Miss, let's you and I have a little fun together: you see they have all left us, so now let's leave them." But I begged to be excused, and went to the other side of Madame Duval.

This Garden, as it is called, is neither flriking for magnificence nor for beauty; and we were all fo dull and languid, that I was extremely glad when we were fummoned to the orchestra, upon the opening of a concert; in the course of which I had the pleasure of hearing a concert on the violin by Mr. Barthelemon, who to me seems a player of

exquisite fancy, feeling, and variety.

When notice was given us that the fire-works were preparing, we hurried along to fecure good places for the fight; but very foon we were fo encircled and incommoded by the crowd, that Mr. Smith proposed the ladies should make interest for a form to stand upon: this was soon effected; and the men then left us to accommodate themselves better; saying, they would return the moment the exhibition was over.

The fire-work was really beautiful; and told, with wonderful ingenuity, the story of Orpheus and Eurydice: but, at the moment of the fatal look which separated them for ever, there was such an explosion of fire, and so horrible a noise, that we all, as of one accord, jumpt hastily from the form, and ran away some paces, fearing that we were in danger of mischief from the innumerable sparks of

fire which glittered in the air.

For a moment or two I neither knew nor confidered whither I had run; but my recollection was

foon awakened by a stranger's addressing me with, "Come along with me, my dear, and I'll take care of you."

I started; and then, to my great terror, perceived that I had out-run all my companions, and faw not one human being I knew! With all the speed in my power, and forgetful of my first fright, I hastened back to the place I had left; but found

the form occupied by a new fet of people.

In vain, from fide to fide, I looked for fome face I knew; I found myself in the midst of a crowd, yet without party, friend, or acquaintance. I walked in disordered haste from place to place, without knowing which way to turn, or whither I went. Every moment I was spoken to by some bold and unfeeling man; to whom my diffress, which I think must be very apparent, only furnished a pretence for impertinent witticisms, or free gallantry.

At last a young officer, marching fiercely up to me, faid, "You are a fweet pretty creature, and I enlift you in my fervice;" and their, with great violence, he feifed my hand. I fereamed aloud with fear; and forcibly fnatching it away, I ran haftily up to two ladies, and cried, " For Heaven's fake, dear

ladies, afford me some protection!"

They heard me with a loud laugh, but very readily faid, "Ay, let her walk between us;" and each of

them took hold of an arm.

Then, in a drawling, ironical tone of voice, they asked what had frightened my little Ladyship? I told them my adventure very fimply, and intreated they would have the goodness to assist me in finding my friends.

O yes, to be fure, they faid, I should not want for friends, whilst I was with them. Mine, I said, would be very grateful for any civilities with which they might favour me. But imagine, my dear Sir, how I must be confounded, when I observed, that every other word I spoke produced a loud laugh!

However, I will not dwell upon a conversation, which foon, to my inexpressible horror, convinced me I had fought protection from infult of those who were themselves most likely to offer it! You, my dearest Sir, I well know, will both feel for, and pity my

terror, which I have no words to describe.

Had I been at liberty, I should have instantly run away from them when I made the shocking difcovery; but, as they held me fast, that was utterly impossible: and such was my dread of their refentment or abuse, that I did not dare make any openattempt to escape.

They asked me a thousand questions, accompanied by as many halloos, of who I was, what I was, and whence I came? My answers were very incoherent; -- but what, good Heaven, were my emotions, when, a few moments afterwards. I per-

ceived advancing our way-Lord Orville!

Never shall I forget what I felt at that instant: Had I, indeed, been funk to the guilty state which fuch companions might lead him to fuspect, I could fcarce have had feelings more cruelly depretfing.

However, to my infinite joy, he passed us without distinguishing me; though I saw that, in a

careless manner, his eyes surveyed the party.

As foon as he was gone, one of these unhappy women faid, "Do you know that young fellow?"

Not thinking it possible she should mean Lord Orville by fuch a term, I readily answered, "No. Madam.'

"Why then," answered she, "you have a monstrous good stare for a little country Miss."

I now found I had mistaken her, but was glad to

avoid an explanation.

A few minutes after, what was my delight to hear the voice of Mr. Brown, who called out, "Lord, i'n't that Miss what's her name?"

"Thank God," cried I, fuddenly springing from them both, "thank God, I have found my party."

Mr. Brown was, however, alone; and, without knowing what I did, I took hold of his arm.

"Lord, Miss," cried he, "we've had such a hunt you can't think! some of them thought you was gone home: but I says, says I, I don't think, says I, that she's like to go home all alone, says I."

"So that gentleman belongs to you, Mis, does

he?" faid one of the women.

"Yes, Madam," answered I, "and I now thank you for your civility; but as I am safe, will not give you any further trouble."

I courtefy'd flightly, and would have walked away; but, most unfortunately, Madame Duvatand the two Miss Branghtons just then joined us.

They all began to make a thousand inquiries; to which I briefly answered, that I had been obliged to these two ladies for walking with me, and would tell them more another time: for tho' I felt great comparative courage, I was yet too much intimidat-

ed by their presence; to dare be explicit.

Neverthelefs, I ventured once more to wish them good night, and proposed seeking Mr. Branghton. These unhappy women listened to all that was said with a kind of callous curiosity, and seemed determined not to take any hint. But my vexation was terribly augmented when, after having whispered something to each othe, they very cavalierly declared, that they intended joining our party! and then, one of them, very boldly took hold of my arm, while the other, going round, seized that of Mr. Brown; and thus, almost forcibly, we were moved on between them, and followed by Madame Duval and the Miss Branghtons.

It would be very difficult to fay which was greatest, my fright, or Mr. Brown's consternation; who ventured not to make the least resistance, though his uneasiness made him tremble almost as much as my self. I would instantly have withdrawn my arm; but it was held so tight I could not move it; and

poor

poor Mr. Brown was circumstanced in the same manner on the other side; for I heard him say, "Lord, Ma'am, there's no need to squeeze one's arm so!"

And this was our fituation, — for we had not taken three steps, when, —O Sir, —we again met Lord Orville!—but not again did he pass quietly by us:—unhappily I caught his eye;—both mine immediately were bent to the ground; but he approached me, and we all stopped.

I then looked up. He bowed. Good God, with what expressive eyes did he regard me! Never were surprise and concern so strongly marked:—yes, my dear Sir, he looked greatly concerned; and that, the remembrance of that, is the only consolation I feel, for an evening the most painful of my life.

What he first said I know not; for, indeed, I feemed to have neither ears nor understanding; but I recollect that I only courtefy din silence. He paused for an instant, as if—I believe so,—as if unwilling to pass on; and then, finding the whole party detained, he again bowed, and took leave.

Indeed, my dear Sir, I thought I should have fainted; so great was my emotion from shame, vexation, and a thousand other feelings, for which I have no expressions. I absolutely tore myself from the woman's arm; and then disengaging myself from that of Mr. Brown, I went to Madame Duval, and besought that she would not suffer me to be again parted from her.

that

emed

Ch

OW

took

105.

his

I fancy—that Lord Orville saw what passed; for scarcely was I at liberty, ere he returned. Methought, my dear Sir, the pleasure, the surprise of that moment, recompensed me for all the chagrin I had before selt: for do you not think, that this return manifests, from a character so quiet, so referved as Lord Orville's, something like solicitude in my concerns? such at least was the interpretation I involuntarily made upon again seeing him.

With a politeness to which I have been some-

time very little used, he apologised for returning; and then inquired after the health of Mrs. Mirvan, and the rest of the Howard Grove samily. The stattering conjecture which I have just acknowledged, had so wonderfully restored my spirits, that I believe I never answered him so readily, and with so little constraint. Very short, however, was the duration of this conversation: for we

were foon most disagreeably interrupted.

The Miss Branghtons, though they saw almost immediately the characters of the women to whom I had fo unfortunately applied, were, nevertheless, fo weak and foolish, as merely to titter at their behaviour. As to Madame Duval, she was for fome time fo strangely imposed upon, that she thought they were two real fine ladies. Indeed, it is wonderful to fee how eafily and how frequently the is deceived. Our disturbance, laswever, arose from young Brown, who was now between the two women, by whom his arms were abfolutely pinioned to his fides: for a few minutes his complaints had been only murmured; but he now called out aloud, "Goodness, Ladies, you hurt me like any thing! why, I can't walk at all, if you keep pinching my arms fo!"

This speech raised a loud laugh in the women, and redoubled the tittering of the Miss Branghtons. For my own part, I was most cruelly contused; while the countenance of Lord Orville manifested a fort of indignant astonishment; and, from that moment, he spoke to me no more till he

took leave.

Madame Duval, who now began to fuspect her company, proposed our taking the first box we saw empty, bespeaking a supper, and waiting till Mr. Branghton should find us.

Mifs Polly mentioned one she had remarked, to which we all turned. Madame Duval instantly feated herself; and the two bold women, forcing

the

the frightened Mr. Brown to go between them,

followed her example.

Lord Orville, with an air of gravity that wounded my very foul, then wished me good night. I said not a word; but my face, if it had any connection with my heart, must have looked melancholy indeed: and so I have some reason to believe it did; for he added, with much more softness, though not less dignity, "Will Miss Anville allow me to ask her address, and to pay my respects to her before I leave town?"

O how I changed colour at this unexpected request!—yet what was the mortification I suffered in answering, "My Lord, I am—in Holborn!"

He then bowed, and left us.

What, what can he think of this adventure! how strangely, how cruelly have all appearances turned against me! Had I been blessed with any prefence of mind, I should instantly have explained to him the accident which occasioned my being in such

terrible company; -but I have done!

As to the rest of the evening, I cannot relate the particulars of what passed; for, to you, I only write of what I think; and I can think of nothing but this unfortunate, this disgraceful meeting. These two wretched women continued to torment us all, but especially poor Mr. Brown, who seemed to afford them uncommon diversion, till we were discovered by Mr. Branghton, who very soon found means to release us from their persecutions, by frightening them away. We stayed but a short time after they left us, weich was all employed in explanations.

Whatever may be the construction which Lord Orville may put upon this affair, to me it cannot fail of being unfavourable; to be seen—gracious Heaven! to be seen in company with two women of such character!—How vainly, how proudly have I wished to avoid meeting him when only with

the Branghtons and Madame Duval; -but now, how joyful should I be had he seen me to no greater difadvantage!-Holborn, too! what a direction!-He who had always-but I will not torment you, my dearest Sir, with any more of my mortifying conjectures and apprehensions: perhaps he may call, -and then I shall have an opportunity of explaining to him all the most shocking part of the adventure. And yet, as I did not tell him at whose house I lived, he may not be able to discover me; I merely faid, in Holborn; and he, who I suppose faw my embarrassment, forbore to ask any other direction.

Well, I must take my chance!

Yet let me, in justice to Lord Orville, and in justice to the high opinion I have always entertained of his honour and delicacy, let me observe the difference of his behaviour, when nearly in the same situation to that of Sir Clement Willoughby. He had, at least, equal cause to depreciate me in his opinion, and to mortify and fink me in my own: but far different was his conduct ;perplexed, indeed, he looked, and much furprifed; -but it was benevolently, not with infolence. I am even inclined to think, that he could not fee a young creature whom he had fo lately known in a higher fphere, appear fo fuddenly, fo strangely, fo difgracefully altered in her fituation, without fome pity and concern. But whatever might be his doubts and fuspicions, far from suffering them to influence his behaviour, he spoke, he looked, with the same politeness and attention with which he had always honoured me when countenanced by Mrs. Mirvan.

Once again, let me drop this subject.

In every mortification, every diffurbance, how grateful to my heart, how fweet to my recollection, is the certainty of your never-failing tenderness, sympathy, and protection! Oh, Sir, could I upon this subject, could I write as I feel,-how animated would be the language of your devoted

## LETTER VIII.

EVELINA to the Rev. Mr. VILLARS.

Holborn, July 1.

LISTLESS, uneafy, and without either spirit or courage to employ myfelf, from the time I had finished my last letter, I indolently seated myfelf at the window, where, while I waited Madame Duval's fummons to breakfast, I perceived, among the carriages which passed by, a coronetcoach, and, in a few minutes, from the window of it, Lord Orville! I instantly retreated, but not,, I believe, unfeen; for the coach immediately drove up to our door.

Indeed, my dear Sir, I must own I was greatly agitated; the idea of receiving Lord Orville by myself,-the knowledge that his visit was entirely to me,-the with of explaining the unfortunate adventure of yesterday, and the mortification of my present circumstances,-all these thoughts, occurring to me nearly at the fame time, occasioned me more anxiety, confusion, and perplexity, than I

ean possibly express.

I believe he meant to fend up his name; but the maid, unused to such a ceremony, forgot it by the way, and only told me, that a great Lord was below, and defired to fee me: and, the next moment, he

appeared himfelf.

If fermerly, when in the circle of high life, and accustomed to its manners, I so much admired and diftinguished the grace, the elegance of Lord Orville, think, Sir, how they must strike we now, ---now, when far removed from that splendide circle, I live with those to whom even civility isunknown, and decorum a stranger!

I am fure I received him very awkwardly: depressed by a situation so disagreeable-could I do otherwise? When his first inquiries were made,

66. I think

"I think myself very fortunate," he said, "in meeting with Miss Anville at home, and still more

fo in finding her difengaged."

I only courtefy'd. He then talked of Mrs. Mirvan, asked how long I had been in town, and other such general questions; which happily gave me time to recover from my embarrassment. After which he said, "If Miss Anville will allow me the honour of fitting by her a few minutes (for we were both standing). I will venture to tell her the motive which, next to inquiring after her health, has prompted me to wait on her thus early."

We were then both feated; and, after a fhort pause, he faid, "How to apologise for so great a liberty as I am upon the point of taking, I know not;—shall I, therefore, rely wholly upon your good-

nefs, and not apologife at all?"

I only bowed.

"I should be extremely forry to appear impertinent,—yet hardly know how to avoid it."

"Impertinent! O, my Lord," cried I eagerly,

" that, I am fure, is impossible!"

"You are very good," answered he, " and en-

courage me to be ingenuous-"

Again he stopped: but my expectation was too great for speech. At last, without looking at me, in a low voice, and hesitating manner, he said, "Were those ladies with whom I saw you last night ever in your company before?"

"No, my Lord," cried I, rifing and colouring

violently, " nor will they ever be again."

He rose too; and, with an air of the most condescending concern, said, "Pardon, Madam, the abruptness of a question which I knew not how to introduce as I ought, and for which I have no excuse to offer but my respect for Mrs Mirvan, joined to the sincerest wishes for your happiness: yet I fear I have gone too far!"

" I am very fensible of the honour of your Lord-

flip's attention," faid I; "but-"

" Permit

"Permit me to affure you," cried he, finding I hefitated, "that officiousness is not my characteristic; and that I would by no means have risked your displeasure, had I not been fully satisfied you were too generous to be offended without a real cause of offence."

"Offended!" cried I, "no, my Lord, I am only grieved.—Grieved, indeed, to find myfelf in a fituation fo unfortunate as to be obliged to make explanations, which cannot but mortify and shock me."

"It is I alone," cried he with fome eagerness, "who am shocked, as it is I who deserve to be mortified. I seek no explanation, for I have no doubt; but in mistaking me, Miss Anville injures herself: allow me, therefore, frankly and openly, to tell you the intention of my visit."

I bowed, and we both returned to our feats.

"I will own myself to have been greatly furprised," continued he, "when I met you yesterday evening, in company with two persons who I was fensible merited not the honour of your notice: nor was it easy for me to conjecture the cause of your being so situated; yet, believe me, my incertitude did not for a moment do you injury. I was fatisfied that their characters must be unknown to you; and I thought, with concern, of the shock you would fustain when you discovered their unworthiness. I should not, however, upon so short an acquaintance, have usurped the privilege of intimacy, in giving my unasked sentiments upon so delicate a subject, had I not known that credulity is the fifter of innocence, and therefore feared you might be deceived. A fomething which I could not refift, urged me to the freedom I have taken to caution you; but I shall not easily forgive myself if I have been fo unfortunate as to give you pain."

The pride which his first question had excited, now subsided into delight and gratitude; and I instantly related to him, as well as I could, the ac-

cident

cident which had occasioned my joining the unhappy women with whom he had met me. He listened with an attention so flattering, seemed so much interested during the recital, and, when I had done, thanked me in terms so polite, for what he was pleased to call my condescension, that I was almost ashamed either to look at or hear him.

Soon after the maid came to tell me that Madame Duval defired to have breakfast made in her

own room.

"I fear," cried Lord Orville, instantly rising, that I have intruded upon your time;—yet who, fo fituated, could do otherwise?" Then, taking my hand, "Will Miss Anville allow me thus to feal my peace?" he pressed it to his lips, and took leave.

Generous, noble Lord Orville! how difinterested his conduct! how delicate his whole behaviour! willing to advise, yet asraid to wound me!—Can I ever, in future, regret the adventure I met with at Marybone, since it has been productive of a visit so statering? Had my mortifications been still more humiliating, my terrors still more alarming, such a mark of esteem—may I not call it so?—from Lord Orville, would have made me ample amends.

And indeed, my dear Sir, I require fome confolation in my present very disagreeable situation; for, since he went, two incidents have happened, that, had not my spirits been particularly elated, would

greatly have disconcerted me.

During breakfast, Madame Duval, very abruptly, asked, if I should like to be married? and added, that Mr. Branghton had been proposing a match for me with his son. Surprised, and, I must own, provoked, I assured her that, in thinking of me, Mr. Branghton would very vainly lose his time.

"Why," cried she, "I have had grander views for you myself, if once I could get you to Paris, and make you be owned; but if I can't do that, and you can do no better, why, as you are both my relations,

I think

I think to leave my fortune between you; and then, if you marry, you never need want for nothing."

I begged her not to pursue the subject, as, I assured her, Mr. Branghton was totally disagreeable to me; but she continued her admonitions and reflections, with her usual disregard of whatever I could answer. She charged me, very peremptorily, neither wholly to discourage, nor yet to accept Mr. Branghton's offer, till she saw what could be done for me: the young man, she added, had often intended to speak to me himself, but, not well knowing how to introduce the subject, he had defired her to pave the way for him.

I forupled not, warmly and freely, to declare my aversion to this proposal; but it was to no effect; she concluded, just as she had begun, by faying, that I should not have him, if I could do better.

Nothing, however, shall persuade me to listen to

any other person concerning this odious affair.

My fecond cause of uneasiness arises, very unexpectedly, from M. Du Bois; who, to my infinite surprise, upon Madame Duval's quitting the room after dinner, put into my hand a note, and imme-

diately left the house.

nor

This note contains an open declaration of an attachment to me; which, he fays, he should never have prefumed to have acknowledged, had he not been informed that Madame Duval destined my hand to young Branghton,—a match which he cannot endure to think of. He beseeches me earnestly to pardon his temerity; professes the most inviolable respect; and commits his sate to time, patience, and pity.

This conduct in M. Du Bois gives me real concern, as I was disposed to think very well of him. It will not, however, be difficult to discourage him; and, therefore, I shall not acquaint Madame Duval of his letter, as I have reason to believe it would.

greatly displease her.

# LETTER IX.

# EVELINA in Continuation.

July 3.

O SIR, how much uneafiness must I suffer to counterbalance one short morning of happiness?

Yesterday the Branghtons proposed a party to Kensington Gardens; and, as usual, Madame Du-

val infifted upon my attendance.

We went in a hackney-coach to Piccadilly, and then had a walk through Hyde Park; which in any other company would have been delightful. I was much pleafed with Kenfington Gardens, and think them infinitely preferable to those of Vauxhall.

Young Branghton was extremely troublesome; he insisted upon walking by my side, and talked with me almost by compulsion: however, my referve and coldness prevented his entering upon the hateful subject which Madame Duval had prepared me to apprehend. Once, indeed, when I was accidentally a few yards before the rest, he said, "I suppose, Miss, aunt has told you about—you knew what?—ha'n't she, Miss?"—But I turned from him without making any answer. Neither Mr. Smith nor Mr. Brown were of the party; and poor M. Du Bois, when he found that I avoided him, looked so melancholy, that I was really forry for him.

While we were strolling round the garden, Is perceived, walking with a party of ladies at some distance, Lord Orville! I instantly retreated behind Miss Branghton, and kept out of fight till we had passed him; for I dreaded being seen by him again in a public walk with a party of which I was

aihamed.

Happily I fucceeded in my defign, and faw no more of him; for a fudden and violent shower of rain made us all hasten out of the gardens. We

ged shelter. Here we found ourselves in company with two sootmen, whom the rain had driven into the shop. Their livery I thought I had before seen; and, upon looking from the window, I perceived the same upon a coachman belonging to a carriage, which I immediately recollected to be Lord Orville's.

Fearing to be known, I whispered Miss Branghton not to speak my name. Had I considered but a moment, I should have been sensible of the inutility of such a caution, since not one of the party call me by any other appellation than that of Cousan or of Miss; but I am perpetually involved in some distress or dilemma from my own heedlessness.

This request excited very strongly her curiosity; and she attacked me with such eagerness and blunt-ness of inquiry, that I could not avoid telling her the reason of my making it, and, consequently, that I was known to Lord Orville: an acknowledgment which proved the most unfortunate in the world; for she would not rest till she had drawn from me the circumstances attending my first making the acquaintance. Then, calling to her sister, she said, "Lord, Polly, only think! Miss has danced with a Lord!"

"Well," cried Polly, "that's a thing I should never have thought of! And, pray, Miss, what did

he fay to you?"

This question was much sooner asked than answered; and they both became so very inquisitive and earnest, that they soon drew the attention of Madame Duval and the rest of the party; to whom, in a very short time, they repeated all they had gathered from me.

"Goodness, then," cried young Branghton, "if I was Miss, if I would not make free with his

Lordship's coach to take me to town."

"Why, ay," faid the father, "there would be fome fense in that; that would be making some use

use of a Lord's acquaintance, for it would fave us coach-hire."

"Lord, Mifs," cried Polly, "I wish you would; for I should like of all things to ride in a coronet-coach."

"I promise you," said Madame Duval, "I'm glad you've thought of it, for I don't see no objection;—so let's have the coachman called."

"Not for the world," cried I, very much alarm-

ed: "indeed it is utterly impossible."

"Why so?" demanded Mr. Branghton: "pray, where's the good of your knowing a Lord, if you're never the better for him?"

"Ma foi, child," faid Madame Duval, "you don't know no more of the world than if you was a baby. Pray, Sir (to one of the footmen), tell that coachman to draw up, for I wants to fpeak to him."

The man stared, but did not move. "Pray, pray, Madam," faid I, "pray, Mr. Branghton, have the goodness to give up this plan; I know but very little of his Lordship, and cannot upon any account take so great a liberty."

"Don't fay nothing about it," faid Madame Duval, "for I shall have it my own way: so, if you won't call the coachman, Sir, I'll promise you

I'll call him myself."

The footman, very impertinently, laughed and turned upon his heel. Madame Duval, extremely irritated, ran out in the rain, and beckoned the coachman, who inflantly obeyed her fummons. Shocked beyond all expression, I slew after her, and entreated her, with the utmost earnestness, to let us return in a hackney-coach:—but, oh!—she is impenetrable to persuasion! She told the man she wanted him to carry her directly to town, and that she would answer for him to Lord Orville. The man, with a fneer, thanked her; but said he should answer for himself; and was driving off, when another footman came up to him, with information that his

Lord

Lord was gone into Kenfington Palace, and would

not want him for an hour or two.

"Why, then, friend, faid Mr. Branghton, (for we were followed by all the party,) "where will be the great harm of your taking us to town?"

"Besides," said the son, "I'll promise you a pot

of beer for my own share."

These speeches had no other answer from the coachman than a loud laugh, which was echoed by the insolent sootman. I rejoiced at their resistance; though I was certain, that if their Lord had witnessed their impertinence, they would have been instantly dimissed his service.

"Pardi," cried Madame Duval, "if I don't think all the footmen the most impudentest fellows in the kingdom! But I'll promise you I'll have your master told of your airs; so you'll get no good

by 'em."

"Why, pray," faid the coachman, rather alarmed, "did my Lord give you leave to use the coach?"

"It's no matter for that," answered she; "I'm fure if he's a gentleman, he'd let us have it sooner than we should be wet to the skin; but I'll promise you he shall know how saucy you've been, for this young lady knows him very well."

" Ay, that she does," faid Miss Polly! " and she's

danced with him too."

Oh, how I repented my foolish mismanagement! The men bit their lips, and looked at one another in some consustion. This was perceived by our party; who, taking advantage of it, protested they would write Lord Orville word of their ill behaviour without delay. This quite startled them; and one of the sootmen offered to run to the palace, and ask his Lord's permission for our having the carriage.

This proposal really made me tremble, and the Branghtons all hung back upon it; but Madame Duval is never to be dissuaded from a scheme, she has once formed. "Do so," cried she; "and give

this

this child's compliments to your master; and tell'him, as we ha'n't no coach here, we should be glad to go just as far as Holborn in his."

"No, no, no!" cried I; "don't go,—I know nothing of his Lordship,—I fend no message,—I

have nothing to fay to him!"

The men, very much perplexed, could with difficulty restrain themselves from resuming their impertinent mirth. Madame Duval scolded mevery angrily, and then desired them to go directly. "Pray, then," said the coachman, "what name is be given to my Lord?"

"Anville," answered Madame Duval; "tellhim Miss Anville wants the coach; the young lady

he danced with once."

I was really in an agony; but the winds could not have been no more deaf to me, than those to whom I pleaded! and therefore the footman, urged by the repeated threats of Madame Duval, and perhaps recollecting the name himself, actually went to the palace with the strange message!

He returned in a few minutes; and, bowing to me with the greatest respect, said, "My Lord desires his compliments, and his carriage will be al-

ways at Miss Anville's service."

I was so much affected by this politeness, and chagrined at the whole affair, that I could scarce refrain from tears. Madame Duval and the Miss Branghtons eagerly jumped into the coach, and defired me to follow. I would rather have submitted to the severest punishment;—but all resistance was vain.

During the whole ride I faid not a word: however, the rest of the party were so talkative, that my silence was very immaterial. We stopped at our lodgings; but when Madame Duval and I alighted, the Branghtons asked if they could not be carried on to Snow Hill? the servants, now all civility, made no objection. Remonstrances from me would, I too well knew, be fruitless; and there-

Therefore, with a heavy heart, I retired to my room,

and left them to their own direction.

Seldom have I passed a night in greater uneasiness.—So lately to have cleared myself in the good opinion of Lord Orville,—so soon to forseit it!—to give him reason to suppose I presumed to boast of his acquaintance!—to publish his having danced with me!—to take with him a liberty I should have blushed to have taken with the most intimate of my friends!—to treat, with such impertinent freedom, one who has honoured me with such distinguished respect!—Indeed, Sir, I could have met with no accident that would so cruelly have tormented me!

If fuch were, then, my feelings, imagine,—for a cannot describe, what I suffered during the scene

I am now going to write.

This morning, while I was alone in the diningroom, young Branghton called. He entered with a most important air; and strutting up to me, said, "Miss, Lord Orville fends his compliments to you."

"Yes, Miss, Lord Orville; for I know his Lordship now as well as you.—And a very civil gentle-

man he is, for all he's a Lord."

"For Heaven's fake," cried I, "explain yourself."
"Why, you must know, Miss, after we left

"Why, you must know, Miss, after we left you we met with a little misfortune; but I don't mind it now, for it's all turned out for the best: but, just as we were a-going up Snow-Hill, plump we comes against a cart, with such jogg it almost pulled the coach-wheel off. However, that i'n't the worst; for as I went to open the door in a hurry, a-thinking the coach would be broke down, as ill-luck would have it, I never minded that the glass was up, and so I poked my head fairly through it.—Only see, Miss, how I've cut my forehead!"

A much worse accident to himself would not, I believe, at that moment have given me any concern for him: however, he proceeded with his

account,

account, for I was too much confounded to inter-

rupt him.

"Goodness, Miss, we were in such a stew, us, and the servants, and all, as you can't think; for, besides the glass being broke, the coachman said how the coach wouldn't be safe to go back to Kensington. So we did not know what to do; however, the footman said they'd go and tell his Lordship what had happened. So then sather grew quite uneasy like, for fear of his Lordship's taking offence, and prejudicing us in our business: so he said I should go this morning and ask his pardon, 'cause of having broke the glass. So then I asked the sootman the direction, and they told me he lived in Berkleysquare: so this morning I went,—and I soon found out the house."

"You did!" cried I, quite out of breath with

apprehension.

" Yes, Mifs, and a very fine house it is. — Did you ever see it?"

" No."

"No!—why, then, Miss, I know more of his Lordship than you do, for all you knew him first. So, when I came to the door, I was in a peck of troubles, a thinking what I should fay to him: however, the servants had no mind I should see him; for they told me he was bufy, but I might leave my message. So I was just a-coming away, when I bethought myself to say I came from you."

" From me!"

"Yes, Mis;—for you know, why should I have fuch a long walk as that for nothing? So I says to the porter, says I, tell his Lordship, says I, one wants to speak to him as comes from one Miss Anville, says I."

"Good God," cried I, " and by what authority

did you take fuch a liberty?"

"Goodness, Miss, don't be in such a hurry, for you'll be as glad as me when you hear how well it all

all turned out. So then they made way for me, and faid his Lordship would see me directly; and there I was led through fuch a heap of fervants, and fo many rooms, that my heart quite mifgave me; for I thought, thinks I, he'll be so proud he'll hardly let me speak; but he's no more proud than I am, and he was as civil as if I'd been a lord myfelf. So then I faid, I hoped he wouldn't take it amiss about the glass, for it was quite an accident; but he bid me not mention it, for it did not fignify. And then he faid he hoped you got fafe home, and wasn't frightened; and fo I faid Yes, and I gave your duty to him."

"My duty to him!" exclaimed I,-" and who

gave you leave?-who defired you?"

"O, I did it of my own head, just to make him think I came from you. But I should have told you before how the footman faid he was going out of town to-morrow evening, and that his fifter was foon to be married, and that he was a ordering a heap of things for that; fo it come into my head, as he was so affable, that I'd ask him for his custom. So I fays, fays I, my Lord, fays I, if your Lordship i'n't engaged particularly, my father is a filverfmith, and he'd be very proud to ferve you, fays I; and Miss Anville, as danced with you, is his cousin, and she's my cousin too, and she'd be very much obligated to you, I'm fure."

"You'll drive me wild, (cried I, starting from my feat,) " you have done me an irreparable injury;but I will hear no more!"-and then I ran into my

own room.

it 100,

oli

be.

I was half frantic, I really raved; the good opinion of Lord Orville feemed now irretrievably loft: a faint hope, which, in the morning, I had vainly encouraged, that I might fee him again, and explain the transaction, wholly vanished, now I found he was fo foon to leave town: and I could not but con-

clude that, for the rest of my life, he would regard

me as an object of utter contempt.

The very idea was a dagger to my heart!—I could not support it, and—but I blush to proceed—I fear your disapprobation; yet I should not be conscious of having merited it; but that the repugnance I feel to relate to you what I have done, makes me suspect I must have erred. Will you forgive me, if I own that I first wrote an account of this transaction to Miss Mirvan?—and that I even thought of concealing it from you?—Shortlived, however, was the ungrateful idea, and sooner will I risk the justice of your displeasure, than unworthily betray your generous considence.

You are now probably prepared for what follows -which is a letter—a hafty letter, that, in the height

of my agitation, I wrote to Lord Orville.

" My Lord,

"I am so infinitely ashamed of the application made yesterday for your Lordship's carriage in my name, and so greatly shocked at hearing how much it was injured, that I cannot forbear writing a few lines, to clear myself from the imputation of an impertinence which I blush to be suspected of, and to acquaint you, that the request for your carriage was made against my consent, and the visit with which you were importuned this morning, without my knowledge.

"I am inexpressibly concerned at having been the instrument, however innocently, of so much trouble to your Lordship; but I beg you to believe, that reading these lines is the only part of it which

I have given voluntarily.

"I am, my Lord,
"Your Lordship's most humble fervant,
"Evelina Anville."

I applied to the maid of the house to get this note conveyed to Berkley-square; but scarce had I parted

I parted with it, before I regretted having written at all, and I was flying down stairs to recover it, when the voice of Sir Clement Willoughby stopped me. As Madame Duval had ordered we should be denied to him, I was obliged to return up stairs; and after he was gone, my application was too late,

as the maid had given it to a porter.

My time did not pass very serenely while he was gone; however, he brought me no answer, but that Lord Orville was not at home. Whether or not he will take the trouble to send any,—or whether he will condescend to call,—or whether the affair will rest as it is, I know not; — but in being ignerant, am most cruelly anxious.

#### LETTER X.

### EVELINA in Continuation.

July 4.

You may now, my dear Sir, fend Mrs. Clinton for your Evelina with as much speed as she can conveniently make the journey, for no further opposition will be made to her leaving this town: happy had it perhaps been for her had she never entered it!

This morning Madame Duval desired me to go to Snow-hill, with an invitation to the Branghtons and Mr. Smith to spend the evening with her; and she desired M. Du Bois, who breakfasted with us, to accompany me. I was very unwilling to obey her, as I neither wished to walk with M. Du Bois, nor yet to meet young Branghton. And, indeed, another, a yet more powerful reason, added to my reluctance;—for I thought it possible that Lord Orville might send some answer, or perhaps might call, during my absence; however, I did not dare dispute her commands.

Poor M. Du Bois spoke not a word during our walk, which was, I believe, equally unpleasant to VOL. 11.

us both. We found all the family affembled in the fhop. Mr. Smith, the moment he perceived me, addressed himself to Miss Branghton, whom he entertained with all the gallantry in his power. I rejoice to find that my conduct at the Hampstead ball has had so good an effect. But young Branghton was extremely troublesome; he repeatedly laughed in my face, and looked so impertinently significant, that I was obliged to give up my reserve to M. Du Bois, and enter into conversation with him merely to avoid such boldness.

"Mifs," faid Mr. Branghton, "I'm forry to hear from my fon that you was not pleased with what we did about that Lord Orville; but I should like to know what it was you found fault with, for we did

all for the best."

"Goodness!" cried the fon, "why, if you'd feen Miss, you'd have been furprifed—she went

out of the room quite in a huff, like-"

"It is too late, now," faid I, " to reason upon this subject; but, for the suture, I must take the liberty to request, that my name may never be made use of without my knowledge. May I tell Madame Duval that you will do her the savour to accept her invitation?"

"As to me, Ma'am," faid Mr. Smith, "I am much obliged to the old lady, but I have no mind to be taken in by her again; you'll excuse me, Ma'am."

All the rest promised to come, and I then took leave: but, as I lest the shop, I heard Mr. Branghton say, "Take courage, Tom, she's only coy." And, before I had walked ten yards, the youth followed.

I was fo much offended that I would not look at him, but began to converse with M. Du Bois, who was now more lively than I had ever before seen him; for, most unfortunately, he misinterpreted the reason of my attention to him.

The first intelligence I received when I came home, was, that two gentlemen had called, and

lef

left cards. I eagerly inquired for them, and read the names of Lord Orville and Sir Clement Willoughby. I by no means regretted that I missed seeing the latter, but perhaps I may all my life regret that I missed the former; for probably he has now left town,—and I may see him no more!

"My goodness!" cried young Branghton rudely looking over me, "only think of that Lord's coming all this way! It's my belief he'd got some order ready for father, and so he'd a mind to call and ask

you if I'd told him the truth."

"Pray Betty," cried I, "how long has he been one?"

" Not two minutes, Ma'am."

"Why then, I'll lay you any wager," faid young Branghton, "he faw you and I walking up Holborn Hill!"

"God forbid!" cried I, impatiently; and, too much chagrined to bear with any more of his remarks, I ran up stairs: but I heard him say to M. Du Bois, "Miss is so uppish this morning, that I think I had better not speak to her again."

I wish M. Du Bois had taken the same resolution; but he chose to follow me into the dining-

room, which he found empty.

"Vous ne l'aimez donc pas, ce garçon, Mademoifelle!" cried he.

"Me!" cried I, "no, I deteft him!" for I was

quite fick at heart.

ndi

am

ton

redi

ok al

who feed

" Ab, tu me rends la vie!" cried he; and flinging himself at my feet, he had just caught my hand as

the door was opened by Madame Duval.

Hastily, and with marks of guilty consustion in his face, he arose; but the rage of that lady quite amazed me! Advancing to the retreating M. Du Bois, she began, in French, an attack which her extreme wrath and wonderful volubility almost rendered unintelligible; yet I understood but too much, since her reproaches convinced me she had herself proposed being the object of his affection.

上 2

He defended himself in a weak and evasive manner; and, upon her commanding him from her sight, very readily withdrew: and then, with yet greater violence, she upbraided me with having feduced his heart, called me an ungrateful, designing girl, and protested she would neither take me to Paris, nor any more interest herself in my affairs, unless I would instantly agree to marry young Branghton.

Frightened as I had been at her vehemence, this proposal restored all my courage; and I frankly told her, that in this point I never could obey her. More irritated than ever, she ordered me to quit the room.

Such is the prefent fituation of affairs. I shall excuse myself from seeing the Branghtons this afternoon: indeed, I never wish to see them again. I am forry, however innocently, that I have displeased Madame Duval; yet I shall be very glad to quit this town, for I believe it does not now contain one person I ever wish to again meet. Had I but seen Lord Orville, I should regret nothing: I could then have more fully explained what I so hastily wrote; yet it will always be a pleasure to me to recollect that he called, since I statter myself it was in consequence of his being satisfied with my letter.

Adieu, my dear Sir; the time now approaches when I hope once more to receive your blefling, and to owe all my joy, all my happiness, to your kindness.

# LETTER XI.

Mr. VILLARS to EVELINA.

Berry Hill, July 7.

Welcome, thrice welcome, my darling Evelina, to the arms of the truest, the fondest of your friends! Mrs. Clinton, who shall hasten to you with these lines, will conduct you directly hither;

hither; for I can consent no longer to be parted from the child of my bosom!—the comfort of my age!—the sweet solace of all my infirmities! Your worthy friends at Howard Grove must pardon me that I rob them of the visit you proposed to make them before your return to Berry Hill, for I find my fortitude unequal to a longer separation.

I have much to fay to you, many comments to make upon your late letters, some parts of which give me no little uneasines; but I will reserve my remarks for our future conversations. Hasten, then, to the spot of thy nativity, the abode of thy youth, where never yet care or sorrow had power to annoy thee.—O that they might ever be banished this peaceful dwelling!

Adieu, my dearest Evelina! I pray but that thy satisfaction at our approaching meeting may bear

any comparison with mine!

100

bi

ARTHUR VILLARS.

### LETTER XII.

# EVELINA to Miss MIRVAN.

Berry Hill, July 14.

My fweet Maria will be much furprised, and I am willing to flatter myself, concerned, when, instead of her friend, she receives this letter;—this cold, this inanimate letter, which will but ill express

the feelings of the heart which indites it.

When I wrote to you last Friday, I was in hourly expectation of seeing Mrs. Clinton, with whom I intended to have set out for Howard Grove. Mrs. Clinton came; but my plan was necessarily altered, for she brought me a letter,—the sweetest that ever was penned, from the best and kindest friend that ever orphan was blest with, requiring my immediate attendance at Berry Hill.

I obeyed,—and pardon me if I own I obeyed without

without reluctance: after so long a separation, should I not else have been the most ungrateful of mortals?—And yet,—oh, Maria! though I wished to leave London, the gratification of my wish afforded me no happiness! and though I felt an impatience inexpressible to return hither, no words, no language, can explain the heaviness of heart with which I made the journey. I believe you would hardly have known me;—indeed, I hardly know myself. Perhaps, had I first seen you, in your kind and sympathising bosom I might have ventured to have reposed every secret of my soul;—and then—but let me pursue my journal.

Mrs. Clinton delivered Madame Duval a letter from Mr. Villars, which requested her leave for my return; and, indeed, it was very readily accorded: yet, when she found, by my willingness to quit town, that M. Du Bois was really indifferent to me, she somewhat softened in my favour; and declared, that, but for punishing his folly in thinking of such a child, she would not have consented to my being again

buried in the country.

All the Branghtons called to take leave of me; but I will not write a word more about them: indeed cannot, with any patience, think of that family, to whose forwardness and impertinence is owing all the

unealiness I at this moment suffer!

So great was the depression of my spirits upon the road, that it was with difficulty I could persuade the worthy Mrs. Clinton I was not ill; but, alas! the situation of my mind was such as would have rendered any mere bodily pain, by comparison, even enviable!

And yet, when we arrived at Berry Hill,—when the chaife stopped at this place,—how did my heart throb with joy!—And when, through the window, I beheld the dearest, the most venerable of men, with uplisted hands, returning, as I doubt not, thanks for my safe arrival,—good God! I thought it would

would have burst my bosom!-I opened the chaifedoor myself, I flew,-for my feet did not feem to touch the ground, -into the parlour: he had rifen to meet me; but the moment I appeared he funk into his chair, uttering, with a deep figh, though his face beamed with delight, "My God, I thank thee!"

I sprung forward; and, with a pleasure that bordered upon agony, I embraced his knees, I kiffed his hands, I wept over them, but could not fpeak: while he, now raifing his eyes in thankfulness towards heaven, now bowing down his reverend head, and folding me in his arms, could fcarce articulate the bleffings with which his kind and benevolent heart overflowed.

O, Miss Mirvan, to be so beloved by the best of men,-fhould I not be happy?-Should I have one wish fave that of meriting his goodness?-Yet think me not ungrateful; indeed I am not, although the internal fadness of my mind unfits me, at present, for enjoying as I ought the bounties of Providence.

I cannot journalize, cannot arrange my ideas into

order.

OM

How little has fituation to do with happiness! I had flattered myself that, when restored to Berry Hill, I should be restored to tranquillity: far otherwife have I found it, for never yet had tranquillity and Evelina fo little intercourfe.

I blush for what I have written. Can you, Maria, forgive my gravity? but I restrain it so much, and so painfully, in the presence of Mr. Villars, that I know not how to deny myself the consolation of

indulging it to you.

Adieu, my dear Miss Mirvan.

Yet one thing I must add, do not let the seriousness of this letter deceive you; do not impute to a wrong cause the melancholy I confess, by suppoling that the heart of your friend mourns a too great susceptibility: no, indeed! believe me it

never was, never can be, more affuredly her own than at this moment. So witness in all truth, Your affectionate

EVELINA.

You will make my excuses to the honoured Lady Howard, and to your dear mother.

# LETTER XIII.

EVELINA in Continuation.

Berry Hill, July 21.

You accuse me of mystery, and charge me with referve: I cannot doubt but I must have merited the accufation; yet, to clear myfelf,-you know not how painful will be the task. But I cannot refift your kind intreaties; -indeed I do not with to refift them; for your friendship and affection will foothe my chagrin. Had it arisen from any other cause, not a moment would I have deferred the communication you ask; -but, as it is, I would, were it possible, not only conceal it from all the world, but endeavour to disbelieve it myself. Yet, fince I must tell you, why trifle with your impatience?

I know not how to come to the point; twenty times have I attempted it in vain ;- but I will force

myfelf to proceed.

Oh, Miss Mirvan, could you ever have believed, that one who feemed formed as a pattern for his fellow-creatures, as a model of perfection,-one whose elegance surpassed all description,-whose fweetness of manners disgraced all comparison;oh, Miss Mirvan, could you ever have believed that Lord Orville would have treated me with indignity?

Never, never again will I trust to appearances; -never confide in my own weak judgment ;-never believe that perfon to be good who feems to be amiable! What cruel maxims are we taught by a knowledge of the world !- But while my own reflections absorb me, I forget you are still in suspence.

I had

I had just finished the last letter which I wrote to you from London, when the maid of the house brought me a note. It was given to her, she said, by a footman, who told her he would call the next day for an answer.

This note,—but let it speak for itself.

# " To Miss Anville.

"WITH transport, most charming of thy fex, did I read the letter with which you yesterday morning favoured me. I am forry the affair of the carriage should have given you any concern, but I am highly flattered by the anxiety you express so kindly. Believe me, my lovely girl, I am truly fensible of the honour of your good opinion, and feel myself deeply penetrated with love and gratitude. The correspondence you have so sweetly commenced, I shall be proud of continuing; and I hope the strong sense I have of the favour you do me, will prevent your withdrawing it. Affure yourfelf, that I defire nothing more ardently than to pour forth my thanks at your feet, and to offer those vows which are so justly the tribute of your charms and accomplishments. In your next, I intreat you to acquaint me how long you shall remain in town. The fervant, whom I shall commission to call for an answer, has orders to ride post with it to me. My impatience for his arrival will be very great, though inferior to that with which I burn, to tell you in person how much I am, my sweet girk, "Your grateful admirer,

ence

11;

the nity

ieve

What a letter! how was my proud heart swelled every line I have copied! What I wrote to him you know; tell me, then, my dear friend, do you think it merited such an answer?—and that I have deservedly incurred the liberty he has taken? I meant nothing but a simple apology, which I thought as much due to my own character, as to

his; yet, by the construction he seems to have put upon it, should you not have imagined it contained the avowal of sentiments which might indeed have

provoked his contempt?

The moment the letter was delivered to me, I retired to my own room to read it; and so eager was my first perusal, that,—I am ashamed to own,—it gave me no sensation but of delight. Unsuspicious of any impropriety from Lord Orville, I perceived not immediately the impertinence it implied,—I only marked the expressions of his own regard; and I was so much surprised, that I was unable, for some time to compose myself, or read it again;—I could only walk up and down the room, repeating to myself, "Good God, is it possible?—am I then loved by Lord Orville?"

But this dream was foon over, and I awoke to far different feelings. Upon a fecond reading I thought every word changed,—it did not feem the fame letter,—I could not find one fentence that I could look at without blufhing: my aftonishment was extreme, and it was succeeded by the utmost indignation.

If, as I am very ready to acknowledge, I erred in writing to Lord Orville, was it for him to punish the error? If he was offended, could he not have been filent? If he thought my letter ill-judged, should he not have pitied my ignorance? have considered my youth, and allowed for my inexperience?

Oh, Maria, how have I been deceived in this man! Words have no power to tell the high opinion I had of him; to that was owing the unfortunate folicitude which prompted my writing; a

folicitude I must for ever repent!

Yet perhaps I have rather reason to rejoice than to grieve, since this affair has shewn me his real disposition, and removed that partiality which, covering his every impersection, left only his virtues and good qualities exposed to view. Had the deception continued much longer, had my mind received

received any additional prejudice in his favour who knows whither my mistaken ideas might have led me? Indeed I fear I was in greater danger than I apprehended, or can now think of without trembling; —for, oh, if this weak heart of mine had been penetrated with too deep an impression of his merit, —my peace and happiness had been lost for ever!

I would fain encourage more cheerful thoughts, fain drive from my mind the melancholy that has taken possession of it; but I cannot succeed: for, added to the humiliating feelings which so powerfully oppress me, I have yet another cause of concern;—alas, my dear Maria, I have broken the

tranquillity of the best of men!

I have never had the courage to shew him this cruel letter: I could not bear so greatly to depreciate in his opinion, one whom I had, with infinite anxiety, raised in it myself. Indeed, my first determination was to consine my chagrin totally to my own bosom; but your friendly inquiries have drawn it from me: and now I wish I had made no concealment from the beginning, since I know not how to account for a gravity, which not all my endeavours can entirely hide or repress.

My greatest apprehension is, lest he should imagine that my residence in London has given me a distaste to the country. Every body I see takes notice of my being altered, and looking pale and ill. I should be very indifferent to all such observations, did I not perceive that they draw upon me the eyes of Mr. Villars, which glisten with af-

fectionate concern.

This morning, in speaking of my London expedition, he mentioned Lord Orville. I felt so much disturbed, that I would instantly have changed the subject; but he would not allow me, and, very unexpectedly, he began his panegyric, extolling, in strong terms, his manly and honourable behaviour in regard to the Marybone adventure. My cheeks glowed

glowed with indignation every word he spoke;—
fo lately as I had myself fancied him the noblest
of his sex, now, that I was so well convinced of my
mistake, I could not bear to hear his undeserved
praises uttered by one so really good, so unsuf-

pecting, fo pure of heart!

What he thought of my filence and uneafiness I fear to know; but I hope he will mention the fubject no more. I will not, however, with ungrateful indolence, give way to a fadness which I find infectious to him who merits the most cheerful exertion of my spirits. I am thankful that he has forborne to probe my wound; and I will endeavour to heal it by the consciousness that I have not deserved the indignity I have received. Yet I cannot but lament to find myself in a world so deceitful, where we must suspect what we see, distrust what we hear, and doubt even what we feel.

### LETTER XIV.

EVELINA in Continuation.

Berry Hill, July 29.

MUST own myself somewhat distressed how to answer your raillery: yet believe me, my dear Maria, your suggestions are those of fancy, not of truth. I am unconscious of the weakness you suspect; yet, to dispel your doubts, I will animate myself more than ever to conquer my chagrin,

and to recover my fpirits.

You wonder, you say, since my heart takes no part in this affair, why it should make me so unhappy? And can you, acquainted as you are with the high opinion I entertained of Lord Orville, can you wonder that so great a disappointment in his character should affect me? Indeed, had so strange a letter been sent to me from any body, it could not have failed shocking me; how much more sensibly,

then,

then, must I feel such an affront, when received from the man in the world I had imagined least

capable of giving it?

You are glad I made no reply; affure yourself, my dear friend, had this letter been the most respectful that could be written, the clandestine air given to it, by his proposal of sending his servant for my answer, instead of having it directed to his house, would effectually have prevented my writing. Indeed, I have an aversion the most sincere to all mysteries, all private actions; however soolishly and blameably, in regard to this letter, I have deviated from the open path which, from my earliest infancy, I was taught to tread.

He talks of my having commenced a correspondence with him: And could Lord Orville indeed believe I had such a design? believe me so forward, so bold, so strangely ridiculous? I know not if his man called or not; but I rejoice that I quitted London before he came, and without leaving any message for him. What, indeed, could I have said? it would have been a condescension very unmerited to have

taken any, the least notice of such a letter.

Never shall I cease to wonder how he could write it. Oh, Maria! what, what could induce him so causelessly to wound and affront one who would sooner have died than wilfully offended him?——How mortifying a freedom of style! how cruel an implication conveyed by his thanks and expressions of gratitude! Is it not association, that any man can

appear so modest, who is so vain.

Every hour I regret the secrecy I have observed with my beloved Mr. Villars; I know not what bewitched me, but I felt at first a repugnance to publishing this affair that I could not surmount;—and now, I am ashamed of confessing that I have any thing to confess! Yet I deserve to be punished for the false delicacy which occasioned my silence; since, if Lord Orville himself was contented to surface.

forfeit his character, was it for me, almost at the

expense of my own, to support it?

Yet I believe I should be very easy, now the first shock is over, and now that I see the whole affair with the resentment it merits, did not all my good friends in this neighbourhood, who think me extremely altered, tease me about my gravity, and torment Mr. Villars with observations upon my dejection and falling away. The subject is no sooner started, than a deep gloom overspreads his venerable countenance, and he looks at me with a tenderness so melancholy, that I know not how to endure the consciousness of exciting it.

Mrs. Selwyn, a lady of large fortune, who lives about three miles from Berry Hill, and who has always honoured me with very distinguishing marks of regard, is going in a short time to Bristol, and has proposed to Mr. Villars to take me with her for the recovery of my health. He seemed very much distressed whether to consent or refuse; but I, without any hesitation, warmly opposed the scheme, protesting my health could nowhere be better than in this pure air. He had the goodness to thank me for this readiness to stay with him; but he is all goodness! Oh, that it were in my power to be indeed what, in the kindness of his heart, he has called me, the comfort of his age, and solace of his infirmities!

Never do I wish to be again separated from him. If here I am grave, elsewhere I should be unhappy. In his presence, with a very little exertion, all the cheerfulness of my disposition seems ready to return; the benevolence of his countenance reanimates, the harmony of his temper composes, the purity of his character edifies me! I owe to him every thing; and, far from finding my debt of gratitude a weight, the first pride, the first pleasure of my life, is the recollection of the obligations conferred upon me by a goodness so unequalled.

Once, indeed, I thought there existed another,

—who, when time had wintered o'er his locks, would have thone forth among his fellow-creatures with the fame brightness of worth which dignifies my honoured Mr. Villars; a brightness, how superior in value to that which results from mere quickness of parts, wit, or imagination! a brightness, which, not contented with merely diffusing smiles, and gaining admiration from the sallies of the spirits, reslects a real and a glorious lustre upon all mankind! Oh how great was my error! how ill did I judge! how cruelly have I been deceived!

I will not go to Bristol, though Mrs. Selwyn is very urgent with me;—but I desire not to see any more of the world; the sew months I have already passed in it, have sufficed to give me a disgust even to its name.

I hope too, I shall see Lord Orville no more accustomed, from my first knowledge of him, to regard him as a being superior to his race, his presence, perhaps, might banish my resentment, and I might forget his ill conduct; for oh, Maria!—I should not know how to see Lord Orville—and to think of displeasure!

As a fifter I loved him;—I could have entrusted him with every thought of my heart, had he deigned to wish my confidence: so steady did I think his honour, so feminine his delicacy, and so amiable his nature! I have a thousand times imagined that the whole study of his life, and whole purport of his reslections, tended solely to the good and happiness of others: but I will talk,—write,—think of him no more!

Adieu, my dear friend!

n I

10W

nd h

vitio

proto

int

ydat

85

all

etu

# LETTER XV.

EVELINA in Continuation.

Berry Hill, August 10.

You complain of my filence, my dear Miss Mirvan;—but what have I to write? Narra-

tive does not offer, nor does a lively imagination fupply the deficiency. I have, however, at prefent, fufficient matter for a letter, in relating a conversation I had yesterday with Mr. Villars.

Our breakfast had been the most cheerful we have had since my return hither; and when it was over, he did not, as usual, retire to his study, but continued to converse with me while I worked. We might, probably, have passed all the morning thus sociably, but for the entrance of a farmer, who came to solicit advice concerning some domestic affairs. They withdrew together into the study.

The moment I was alone my spirits failed me; the exertion with which I had supported them had fatigued my mind; I flung away my work, and, leaning my arms on the table, gave way to a train of disagreeable reflections, which, bursting from the restraint that had smothered them, filled me with unusual sadness.

This was my fituation when, looking towards the door, which was open, I perceived Mr. Villars, who was earneftly regarding me. "Is Farmer Smith gone, Sir?" cried I, haftily rifing, and fnatching up my work.

"Don't let me disturb you," faid he, gravely; "I will go again to my study."

"Will you, Sir?—I was in hopes you were com-

ing to fit here."

"In hopes!—and why, Evelina, should you hope it?"

This question was so unexpected, that I knew not how to answer it; but, as I saw he was moving away, I followed, and begged him to return. No, my dear, no," said he, with a forced smile, "I only interrupt your meditations."

Again I knew not what to fay; and while I hesitated, he retired. My heart was with him, but I had not the courage to follow. The idea of an explanation, b rought on in so serious a manner, frightened

frightened me. I recollected the inference you had drawn from my uneafiness, and I feared that he

might make a fimilar interpretation.

WE

)Wil

Solitary and thoughtful, I passed the rest of the morning in my own room. At dinner I again attempted to be cheerful; but Mr. Villars himself was grave, and I had not fufficient spirits to support a conversation merely by my own efforts. As soon as dinner was over, he took a book, and I walked to the window. I believe I remained near an hour in this fituation. All my thoughts were directed to confidering how I might difpel the doubts which I apprehended Mr. Villars had formed, without acknowledging a circumstance which I had suffered so much pain merely to conceal. But while I was thus planning for the future, I forgot the present: and fo intent was I upon the fubject which occupied me, that the strange appearance of my unusual inactivity and extreme thoughtfulness never occurred to me. But when, at last, I recollected myself, and turned round, I faw that Mr. Villars, who had parted with his book, was wholly engrossed in attending to me. I started from my reverie, and, hardly knowing what I faid, asked if he had been reading?

He paused a moment, and then replied, "Yes, my child;—a book that both afflicts and perplexes me."

He means me, thought I; and therefore I made no answer.

"What if we read it together?" continued he,

" will you affift me to clear its obscurity?"

I knew not what to say; but I sighed involuntarily from the bottom of my heart. He rose, and approaching me, said, with emotion, "My child, I can no longer be a silent witness of thy forrow,—is not thy forrow my forrow?—and ought I to be a stranger to the cause, when I so deeply sympathise in the effect?"

"Caufe, Sir!" cried I, greatly alarmed, "what caufe?—I don't know,—I can't tell—I—"

" Fear

"Fear not," faid he, kindly, "to unbosome thyself to me, my dearest Evelina; open to me thy whole heart,—It can have no feelings for which I will not make allowance. Tell me, therefore, what it is that thus afflicts us both; and who knows but I may suggest some means of relies?"

"You are too, too good," cried I, greatly embarraffed; "but indeed I know not what you mean."

"I fee," faid he, "it is painful to you to fpeak: fuppose, then, I endeavour to save you by guessing?"
"Impossible! impossible!" cried I eagerly; "no one living could ever guess, ever suppose—" I stop-

one living could ever guess, ever suppose—" I stopped abruptly; for I then recollected I was acknowledging something was to be guessed: however, he

noticed not my mistake.

"At least let me try," answered he mildly; 
perhaps I may be a better diviner than you imagine: if I guess every thing that is probable, surely I must approach near the real reason. Be honest, then, my love, and speak without reserve;—does not the country, after so much gaiety, so much variety, does it not appear insipid and tiresome?"

"No, indeed! I love it more than ever, and more than ever do I wish I had never, never quit-

ted it!"

"Oh my child! that I had not permitted the journey! My judgment always opposed it, but my resolution was not proof against persuasion."

"I blush, indeed," cried I, "to recollect my earnestness;—but I have been my own punisher!"

"It is too late now," answered he, "to reflect upon this subject; let us endeavour to avoid repentance for the time to come, and we shall not have erted without reaping some instruction." Then, feating himself, and making me sit by him, he continued, "I must now guess again: perhaps you regret the loss of those friends you knew in town; —perhaps you miss their society, and fear you may see them no more?—perhaps Lord Orville——"

I could

I could not keep my feat; but rifing hastily, faid, "Dear Sir, ask me nothing more!—for I have nothing to own,—nothing to fay;—my gravity has been merely accidental, and I can give no reafon for it at all.—Shall I fetch you another book?—or will you have this again?"

For some minutes he was totally filent, and I pretended to employ myself in looking for a book. At last, with a deep sigh, "I see," said he, "I see but too plainly, that though Evelina is returned,—

I have lost my child!"

"No, Sir, no," cried I, inexpressibly shocked, "she is more your's than ever! Without you, the world would be a defart to her, and life a burden:—forgive her, then; and,—if you can,—condescend to be, once more, the considerant of all her thoughts."

"How highly I value, how greatly I wish for her confidence," returned he, "she cannot but know;—yet to extort, to tear it from her,—my justice, my affection, both revolt at the idea. I am forry that I was so earnest with you;—leave me, my dear, leave me, and compose yourself;—we will meet again at tea."

"Do you then refuse to hear me?"

"No, but I abhor to compel you. I have long feen that your mind has been ill at ease, and mine has largely partaken of your concern: I sorbore to question you; for I hoped that time and absence, from whatever excited your uneasines, might best operate in silence: but, alas! your affliction seems only to augment,—your health declines,—your look alters!—Oh, Evelina, my aged heart bleeds to see the change!—bleeds to behold the darling it had cherished, the prop it had reared for its support when bowed down by years and infirmities, sinking itself under the prefure of internal grief!—struggling to hide what it should seek to participate!—But go, my dear, go to your own room; we both want composure, and we will talk of this matter some other time."

"Oh, Sir," cried I, penetrated to the foul; "bid me not leave you !- think me not fo lost to feeling,

to gratitude-

"Not a word of that," interrupted he: "it pains me you should think upon that subject; pains me you should ever remember that you have not a natural, an hereditary right to every thing within my power. I meant not to affect you thus, -I hoped to have foothed you!-but my anxiety betrayed me to an urgency that has distressed you. Comfort yourfelf, my love; and doubt not but that time will stand your friend, and all will end well."

I burst into tears: with difficulty had I so long restrained them; for my heart, while it glowed with tenderness and gratitude, was oppressed with a sense of its own unworthiness. "You are all, all goodness!" cried I, in a voice scarce audible; "little as I deserve, unable as I am to repay, such kindness, -yet my whole foul feels,-thanks you for it!"

"My dearest child," cried he, "I cannot bear to fee thy tears; -for my fake dry them; fuch a fight is too much for me: think of that, Evelina,

and take comfort, I charge thee!"

"Say, then," cried I, kneeling at his feet, "fay then that you forgive me! that you pardon my referve, -that you will again fuffer me to tell you my most fecret thoughts, and rely upon my promife never more to forfeit your confidence! ---- my father! -my protector! - my ever honoured - ever-loved - my best and only friend!-fay you forgive your Evelina, and the will study better to deferve your goodness!"

He raised, he embraced me; he called me his fole joy, his only earthly hope, and the child of his bosom! He folded me to his heart; and, while I wept from the fullness of mine, with words of fweetest kindness and consolation he soothed and

tranquillised me.

Dear to my remembrance will ever be that moment when, banishing the referve I had so foolishly

planned.

planned, and so painfully supported, I was restored

to the confidence of the best of men!

When at length we were again quietly and composedly seated by each other, and Mr. Villars waited for the explanation I had begged him to hear, I found myself extremely embarrassed how to introduce the subject which must lead to it. He saw my distress; and, with a kind of benevolent pleafantry, asked me if I would let him guess any more? I affented in filence.

"Shall I, then, go back to where I left off?"

"If-if you please;-I believe so,-" said I,

Stammering.

"Well, then, my love, I think I was speaking of the regret it was natural you should feel upon quitting those from whom you had received civility and kindness, with so little certainty of ever seeing them again, or being able to return their good offices? These are circumstances that afford but melancholy reflections to young minds; and the affectionate disposition of my Evelina, open to all social feelings, must be hurt more than usual by such confiderations.—You are filent, my dear?—Shall I name those whom I think most worthy the regret I speak of? We shall then see if our opinions coincide.

Still I faid nothing, and he continued.

"In your London journal, nobody appears in a more amiable, a more respectable light, than Lord

Orville; and perhaps-

"I knew what you would fay," cried I hastily, and I have long feared where your fuspicions would fall; but indeed, Sir, you are mistaken: I hate Lord Orville, -he is the last man in the world in whose favour I should be prejudiced."

I stopped; for Mr. Villars looked at me with such infinite surprise, that my own warmth made me blush.

"You hate Lord Orville!" repeated he.

I could make no answer; but took from my pocket-book the letter, and giving it to him, " See,

Sir," faid I, "how differently the fame man can talk and write!"

He read it three times before he spoke; and then faid, "I am so much astonished, that I know not

what I read. When had you this letter?"

I told him. Again he read it; and, after confidering its contents fome time, faid, "I can form but one conjecture concerning this most extraordinary performance: he must certainly have been intoxicated when he wrote it."

"Lord Orville intoxicated!" repeated I: "once I thought him a stranger to all intemperance;—but it is very possible, for I can believe any thing now."

"That a man who had behaved with so strict a regard to delicacy," continued Mr. Villars, "and who, as far as occasion had allowed, manifested sentiments the most honourable, should thus insolently, thus wantonly, insult a modest young woman, in his perfect senses, I cannot think possible. But, my dear, you should have inclosed this letter in an empty cover, and have returned it to him again: such a refentment would at once have become your character, and have given him an opportunity, in some measure, of clearing his own. He could not well have read this letter the next morning without being sensible of the impropriety of having written it."

Oh, Maria, why had not I this thought? I might then have received fome apology; the mortification would then have been his, not mine. It is true, he could not have reinstated himself so highly in my opinion as I had once ignorantly placed him, since the conviction of such intemperance would have levelled him with the rest of his impersect race; yet my humbled pride might have been consoled by his

acknowledgments.

But why should I allow myself to be humbled by a man who can suffer his reason to be thus abjectly debased, when I am exalted by one who knows no vice, and scarcely a failing,—but by hearsay? To

think

think of his kindness, and reflect upon his praises, might animate and comfort me even in the midst of affliction. "Your indignation," faid he, "is the result of virtue; you fancied Lord Orville was without fault—he had the appearance of infinite worthiness, and you supposed his character accorded with his appearance: guileless yourself, how could you prepare against the duplicity of another? Your disappointment has but been proportioned to your expectations, and you have chiefly owed its severity to the innocence which hid its approach."

I will bid these words dwell ever in my memory, and they shall cheer, comfort, and enliven me! This conversation, though extremely affecting to me at the time it passed, has relieved my mind from much anxiety. Concealment, my dear Maria, is the soe of tranquillity: however I may err in suture, I will never be disingenuous in acknowledging my errors. To you and to Mr. Villars I vow an unremitting

confidence.

N.

nily

y 00

, h

And yet, though I am more at ease, I am far from well: I have been some time writing this letter; but I hope I shall send you soon a more cheerful one.

Adieu, my sweet friend. I intreat you not to acquaint even your dear mother with this affair; Lord Orville is a favourite with her, and why should I publish that he deserves not that honour?

### LETTER XVI.

EVELINA in Continuation.

Bristol Hotwell, August 28.

You will be again surprised, my dear Maria, at seeing whence I date my letter: but I have been very ill, and Mr. Villars was so much alarmed, that he not only insisted upon my accompanying Mrs.

Mrs. Selwyn hither, but earnestly desired she would

haften her intended journey.

We travelled very flowly, and I did not find myfelf so much fatigued as I expected. We are fituated upon a most delightful spot; the prospect is beautiful, the air pure, and the weather very favourable to invalids. I am already better, and I doubt not but I shall soon be well; as well, in re-

gard to mere health, as I wish to be.

I cannot express the reluctance with which I parted from my revered Mr. Villars: it was not like that parting which, last April, preceded my journey to Howard Grove, when, all expectation and hope, though I wept I rejoiced, and though I fincerely grieved to leave him, I yet wished to be gone: the forrow I now felt was unmixed with any livelier fenfation; expectation was vanished, and hope I had none! All that I held most dear upon earth I quitted; and that upon an errand, to the success of which I was totally indifferent, the re-establishment of my health. Had it been to have feen my sweet Maria, or her dear mother, I should not have repined.

Mrs. Selwyn is very kind and attentive to me. She is extremely clever: her understanding, indeed, may be called masculine: but, unfortunately, her manners deserve the same epithet; for, in studying to acquire the knowledge of the other fex, the has lost all the foftness of her own. In regard to myself, however, as I have neither courage nor inclination to argue with her, I have never been personally hurt at her want of gentlenefs; a virtue which, nevertheless, seems so essential a part of the semale character, that I find myself more awkward, and less at ease, with a woman who wants it, than I do with a man. She is not a favourite with Mr. Villars, who has often been difgusted at her unmerciful propensity to fatire: but his anxiety that I should try the effect of the Bristol waters, overcame his dislike of committing me to her care. Mrs. Clinton is also here; so that that I shall be as well attended as his utmost par-

tiality could defire.

I will continue to write to you, my dear Miss Mirvan, with as much constancy as if I had no other correspondent; though, during my absence from Berry Hill, my letters may, perhaps, be shortened on account of the minuteness of the journal which I must write to my beloved Mr. Villars: but you, who know his expectations, and how many ties bind me to fulfil them, will, I am sure, rather excuse any omission to yourself, than any negligence to him.

# LETTER XVII.

EVELINA to the Rev. Mr. VILLARS.

Bristol Hotwells, Sept. 12.

THE first fortnight that I passed here was so quiet, so serene, that it gave me reason to expect a settled calm during my stay; but if I may now judge of the time to come, by the present state of my mind, the calm will be succeeded by a storm, of which I

dread the violence!

ing he h

nie

inalia ly his vertice

Jels

This morning, in my way to the pump-room with Mrs. Selwyn, we were both very much incommoded by three gentlemen, who were fauntering by the fide of the Avon, laughing and talking very loud, and lounging fo difagreeably, that we knew not how to pass them. They all three fixed their eyes very boldly upon me, alternately looking under my hat, and whispering one another. Mrs. Selwyn allumed an air of uncommon sternness, and said, "You will please, Gentlemen, either to proceed yourselves, or to suffer us."

"Oh! Ma'am," cried one of them, "we will

suffer you with the greatest pleasure in life."

"You will fuffer us both," answered she, " or I am much mistaken: you had better, therefore, make way quietly; for I should be forry to give my servant the trouble of teaching you better manners."

VOL. II. F Her

Her commanding air struck them, yet they all chose to laugh; and one of them withed the fellow would begin his leffon, that he might have the pleasure of rolling him into the Avon; while another advancing to me with a freedom which made me flart, faid, "By my foul I did not know you! -but I am fure I cannot be mistaken; -had not I the honour of seeing you once at the Pantheon!"

I then recollected the nobleman, who, at that place, had so much embarrassed me. I courtesied without speaking. They all bowed, and making, though in a very easy manner, an apology to Mrs. Selwyn, they suffered us to pass on, but chose to accompany us.

"And where," continued this Lord, "can you fo long have hid yourfelf? do you know I have been in fearch of you this age? I could neither find you out, nor hear of you: not a creature could inform me what was become of you. I cannot imagine where you could be immured. I was at two or three public places every night, in hopes of meeting you. Pray, did you leave town?"

"Yes, my Lord."

"So early in the feafon!—what could possibly induce you to go before the birth-day?"

"I had nothing, my Lord, to do with the birth-

day."

"By my foul, all the women who had, may rejoice you were away. Have you been here any time?"

"Not above a fortnight, my Lord."

" A fortnight!--how unlucky that I did not meet you sooner! but I have had a run of ill luck ever fince I came. How long shall you stay?"

"Indeed, my Lord, I don't know."

"Six weeks, I hope; for I shall wish the place

at the devil when you go."

"Do you, then, flatter yourself, my Lord," said Mrs. Selwyn, who had hitherto listened in filent contempt, "that you shall see such a beautiful spot as this, when you visit the dominions of the devil?"

" Ha,

"Ha, ha, ha! Faith, my Lord," faid one of his companions, who still walked with us, though the other had taken leave, "the Lady is rather hard upon you."

"Not at all," answered Mrs. Selwyn; "for as I cannot doubt but his Lordship's rank and interest will fecure him a place there, it would be reflecting on his understanding, to suppose he should not wish to enlarge and beautify his dwelling."

Much as I was difgusted with this Lord, I must own Mrs. Selwyn's feverity rather furprifed me: but you who have so often observed it, will not wonder she took so fair an oportunity of indulging

her humour.

nyu

"As to places, returned he, totally unmoved, "I am so indifferent to them, that the devil take me if I care which way I go! objects, indeed, I am not fo easy about; and, therefore, I expect, that those angels with whose beauty I am so much enraptured in this world, will have the goodness to afford me some little consolation in the other."

"What, my Lord!" cried Mrs. Selwyn, "would you wish to degrade the habitation of your friend, by admitting into it the infipid company of the up-

per regions?"

"What do you do with yourfelf this evening?" faid his Lordship, turning to me.

"I shall be at home, my Lord." "O, à-propos, where are you?"

"Young ladies, my Lord," faid Mrs. Selwyn,

" are no where."

"Prithee," whispered his Lordship, "is that queer woman your mother?"

Good Heavens, Sir, what words for fuch a

question!

ne p

"No, my Lord."

"Your maiden aunt, then?"

" No."

"Whoever she is, I wish she would mind her own affairs: I don't know what the devil a woman lives for after thirty: fhe is only in other folks' way. Shall you be at the affembly?"

"I believe not, my Lord."

"No!-why then, how in the world can you

contrive to pass your time?"

"In a manner which your Lordship will think very extraordinary," cried Mrs. Selwyn, "for the young Lady reads."

"Ha, ha, ha! Egad, my Lord," cried the facetious companion, "you are got into bad hands."

Jack Coverley here, for you will make nothing of me."

"Of you, my Lord," cried she, "Heaven forbid I should ever entertain so idle an expectation! I only talk, like a filly woman, for the sake of talking; but I have by no means so low an opinion of your Lordship, as to suppose you vulnerable to censure."

"Do, pray, Ma'am," cried he, "turn to Jack Coverley; he's the very man for you;—he'd be a

wit himself if he was not too modest."

"Prithee, my Lord, be quiet," returned the other; "if the Lady is contented to bestow all her favours upon you, why should you make such point of my going snacks?"

"Don't be apprehensive, gentlemen," said Mrs. Selwyn, drily, "I am not romantic;—I have not the least design of doing good to either of you."

"Have not you been ill fince I faw you?" faid

his Lordship, again addressing himself to me.

"Yes, my Lord."

"I thought so; you are paler than you was, and I suppose that's the reason I did not recollect you sooner."

"Has not your Lordship too much gallantry," cried Mrs. Selwyn, "to discover a young lady's ill-

ness by her looks?"

"The devil a word can I speak for that woman," faid he, in a low voice; "do, prithee, Jack, take her in hand."

er Excuse

Excuse me, my Lord," answered Mr. Coverley. "When shall I see you again?" continued his Lordship; "do you go to the pump-room every

morning?"

W-

nfur

U. 17 1

mil

"No, my Lord." " Do you ride out?" "No, my Lord."

Just then we arrived at the pump-room, and an end was put to our conversation, if it is not an abuse of words to give such a term to a string of rude questions and free compliments.

He had not opportunity to fay much more to me, as Mrs. Selwyn joined a large party, and I walked home between two ladies. He had, however, the

curiofity to fee us to the door.

Mrs. Selwyn was very eager to know how I had made aquaintance with this nobleman, whose manners fo evidently announced the character of a confirmed libertine. I could give her very little fatisfaction, as I was ignorant even of his name: But, in the afternoon, Mr. Ridgeway, the apothe-

cary, gave us very ample information.

As his person was easily described, for he is remarkbly tall, Mr. Ridgeway told us he was Lord Merton, a nobleman who is but lately come to his title, though he has already diffipated more than half his fortune; a professed admirer of beauty, but a man of most licentious character: that among men, his companions confifted chiefly of gamblers and jockies; and among women he was rarely admitted.

"Well, Mifs Anville," faid Mrs. Selwyn, " F am glad I was not more civil to him. You may depend upon me for keeping him at a distance."

"O, Madam," faid Mr. Ridgeway, "he may now be admitted any where, for he is going to

reform."

"Has he, under that notion, perfuaded any fool to marry him?"

"Not yet, Madam, but a marriage is expected to take place shortly: it has been some time in agitation; but the friends of the Lady have obliged her to wait till she is of age: however, her brother, who has chiefly opposed the match, now that she is near being at her own disposal, is tolerably quiet. She is very pretty, and will have a large fortune. We expect her at the Wells every day."

"What is her name?" faid Mrs. Selwyn.

"Larpent," answered he: "Lady Louisa Larpent, fister of Lord Orville."

"Lord Orville!" repeated I, all amazement.

"Yes, Ma'am; his Lordship is coming with her. I have had certain information. They are to be at the Honourable Mrs. Beaumont's. She is a relation of my Lord's, and has a very fine house

upon Clifton Hill."

His Lordship is coming with her!—Good God, what an emotion did those words give me! How strange, my dear Sir, that, just at this time, he should visit Bristol! It will be impossible for me to avoid seeing him, as Mrs. Selwyn is very well acquainted with Mrs. Beaumont. Indeed, I have had an escape in not being under the same rook with him, for Mrs. Beaumont invited us to her house immediately upon our arrival; but the inconveniency of being so distant from the pump-room made Mrs. Selwyn decline her civility.

Oh that the first meeting was over!—or that I could quit Bristol without seeing him!—inexpressibly do I dread an interview! Should the same impertinent freedom be expressed by his looks, which dictated his cruel letter, I shall not know how to endure either him or myself. Had I but returned it, I should be easier, because my sentiments of it would then be known to him; but now, he can only gather them from my behaviour; and I tremble lest he should mistake my indignation for confusion!—lest he should misconstrue my reserve

referve into embarrassment!—for how, my dearest Sir, how shall I be able totally to divest myself of the respect with which I have been used to think of him?—the pleasure with which I have been used to see him?

Surely he, as well as I, must recollect the letter at the moment of our meeting; and he will, probably, mean to gather my thoughts of it from my looks;—oh that they could but convey to him my real detestation of impertinence and vanity! then would he see how much he had mistaken my disposition when he imagined them my due.

There was a time when the very idea that fuch a man as Lord Merton should ever be connected with Lord Orville, would have both surprised and shocked me; and even yet I am pleased to hear of his

repugnance to the marriage.

ne,

look know

feni

ion

But how strange, that a man of so abandoned a character should be the choice of a sister of Lord Orville! and how strange, that, almost at the moment of the union, he should be so importunate in gallantry to another woman! What a world is this we live in! how corrupt! how degenerate! well might I be contented to see no more of it! If I find that the eyes of Lord Orville agree with his pen,—I shall then think, that of all mankind, the only wirtuous individual resides at Berry Hill.

#### LETTER XVIII.

EVELINA in Continuation.

Bristol Hotwells, Sept. 16.

OH, Sir, Lord Orville is still himself! still what, from the moment I beheld, I believed him to be—all that is amiable in a man! and your happy Evelina, restored at once to spirits and tranquislity, is no longer sunk in her own opinion, nor discontented with the world;—no longer, with dejected

eyes, fees the prospect of passing her future days in fadness, doubt, and suspicion!—with revived courage she now looks forward, and expects to meet with goodness, even among mankind:—though still she feels, as strongly as ever, the folly of hoping, in any second instance, to meet with perfection.

Your conjecture was certainly right; Lord Orville, when he wrote that letter, could not be in his fenses. Oh that intemperance should have power

to degrade fo low a man fo noble!

This morning I accompanied Mrs. Selwyn to Clifton Hill, where, beautifully fituated, is the house of Mrs. Beaumont. Most uncomfortable were my feelings during our walk, which was very slow; for the agitation of my mind made me more than usually sensible how weak I still continue. As we entered the house, I summoned all my resolution to my aid, determined rather to die than give Lord Orville reason to attribute my weakness to a wrong cause. I was happily relieved from my perturbation, when I saw Mrs. Beaumont was alone. We sat with her for, I believe, an hour without interruption; and then we saw a phaeton drive up to the gate, and a lady and gentleman alight from it.

They entered the parlour with the ease of people who were at home. The gentleman, I soon saw, was Lord Merton: he came shuffling into the room with his boots on, and his whip in his hand; and having made something like a bow to Mrs. Beaumont, he turned towards me. His surprise was very evident; but he took no manner of notice of me. He waited, I believe, to discover, first, what chance had brought me to that house, where he did not look much rejoiced at meeting me. He seated himself very quietly at the window, without speaking to any body.

Mean time the lady, who feemed very young, hobbling rather than walking into the room, made a passing courtesy to Mrs. Beaumont, saying, "How

are you, Ma'am?" and then, without noticing any body elfe, with an air of languor she flung herself upon a sofa, protesting, in a most affected voice, and speaking so softly she could hardly be heard, that she was satigued to death. "Really, Ma'am, the roads are so monstrous dusty,—you can't imagine how troublesome the dust is to one's eyes!—and the sun, too, is monstrous disagreeable!—I dare say so shall be so tanned I shan't be sit to be seen this age. Indeed, my Lord, I won't go out with you any more, for you don't care where you take one."

"Upon my honour," faid Lord Merton, "I took you the pleafantest ride in England; the fault

was in the fun, not me."

n ti

TEN S

101

toti

cel

"Your Lordship is in the right," faid Mrs. Selwyn, "to transfer the fault to the fun, because it has so many excellencies to counterbalance partial inconveniences, that a little blame will not injure that in our estimation."

Lord Merton looked by no means delighted at this attack; which I believe the would not fo readily have made, but to revenge his neglect of us.

"Did you meet your brother, Lady Louisa?"

faid Mrs. Beaumont.

"No, Ma'am. Is he rode out this morning?" I then found, what I had before suspected, that this Lady was Lord Orville's sister: how strange, that such near relations should be so different to each other! There is, indeed, some resemblance in their features; but, in their manners, not the least.

"Yes," answered Mrs. Beaumont, "and I be-

lieve he wished to see you."

"My Lord drove so monstrous fast," said Lady Louisa, "that perhaps we passed him. He frighted me out of my senses; I declare my head is quite giddy. Do you know, Ma'am, we have done nothing but quarrel all the morning?—You can't think how I've scolded; have not I, my Lord?" and she similed expressively at Lord Merton.

You have been, as you always are," faid he, twifting his whip with his fingers, "all fweetness."

"O fie, my Lord," cried fhe, "I know you don't think fo; I know you think me very ill-natured;—don't you, my Lord?"

"No, upon my honour;—how can your Ladyship ask such a question? Pray how goes time? my

watch stands."

"It is almost three," answered Mrs. Beaumont."
"Lord, Ma'am, you frighten me!" cried Lady
Louisa; and then, turning to Lord Merton, "why
now, you wicked creature you, did you not tell me
it was but one?"

Mrs. Selwyn then rose to take leave; but Mrs. Beaumont asked if she would look at the shrubbery. "I should like it much," answered she, "but that

I fear to fatigue Miss Anville."

Lady Louisa then, raising her head from her hand, on which it had leant, turned round to look at me; and having fully satisfied her curiosity, without any regard to the confusion it gave me, turned about, and, again leaning on her hand, took no further notice of me.

I declared myself very able to walk, and begged that I might accompany them. "What say you, Lady Louisa," cried Mrs. Beaumont, "to a strole in

the garden?"

"Me, Ma'am!—I declare I can't stir a step; the heat is so excessive, it would kill me. I'm half dead with it already; besides, I shall have no time to dress. Will any body be here to-day, Ma'am?"

"I believe not, unless Lord Merton will favour

us with his company."

"With great pleasure, Madam."

"Well, I declare you don't deserve to be asked," cried Lady Louisa, "you wicked creature you!— I must tell you one thing, Ma'am,—you can't think how abominable he was! do you know we met Mr. Lovel in his new phaeton, and my Lord was so cruel

as to drive against it?—we really flew. I declare [ could not breathe. Upon my word, my Lord, I'll never trust myself with you again,—I won't indeed!"

We then went into the garden, leaving them to

discuss the point at their leisure.

Do you remember a pretty but affected young lady I mentioned to have seen, in Lord Orville's party, at the Pantheon? How little did I then imagine her to be his sister! yet Lady Louisa Larpent is the very person. I can now account for the piqued manner of her speaking to Lord Merton that evening, and I can now account for the air of displeasure with which Lord Orville marked the undue at-

tention of his future brother-in-law to me.

We had not walked long, ere, at a distance, I perceived Lord Orville, who feemed just difmounted from his horse, enter the garden. All my perturbation returned at the fight of him!-yet I endeavoured to repress every feeling but resentment. As he approached us, he bowed to the whole party; but I turned away my head to avoid taking any share in his civility. Addressing himself immediately to Mrs. Beaumont, he was beginning to inquire after his fister: but, upon seeing my face, he fuddenly exclaimed, "Miss Anville!-" and then he advanced, and made his compliments to me,not with an air of vanity or impertinence, nor yet with a look of confciousness or shame; -but with a: countenance open, manly, and charming!-with a fmile that indicated pleafure, and eyes that sparkled with delight!—on my fide was all the consciousness: for by him, I really believe, the letter was, at that moment, entirely forgotten.

With what politeness did he address me! with what sweetness did he look at me! the very tone of his voice seemed flattering! he congratulated bimself upon his good fortune in meeting with me;—hoped I should spend some time in Bristol, and enquired, even with nxiety enquired, if my health

was the cause of my journey; in which case his satisfaction would be converted into apprehension.

Yet, struck as I was with his manner, and charmed to find him such as he was wont to be, imagine not, my dear Sir, that I forgot the resentment I owe him, or the cause he has given me of displeasure; no, my behaviour was such as, I hope, had you seen, you would not have disapproved: I was grave and distant; I scarce looked at him when he spoke, or answered him when he was filent.

As he must certainly observe this alteration in my conduct, I think it could not fail making himboth recollect and repent the provocation he had so causelessly given me; for surely he was not so wholly lost to reason, as to be now ignorant he had

ever offended me.

The moment that, without abfolute rudeness, I was able, I turned entirely from him, and asked Mrs. Selwyn if we should not be late home? How Lord Orville looked I know not, for I avoided meeting his eyes; but he did not speak another word as we proceeded to the garden-gate. Indeed, I believe, my abruptness surprised him, for he did not seem to expect I had so much spirit. And, to own the truth, convinced as I was of the propriety, nay, necessity, of showing my displeasure, I yet almost hated myself for receiving his politeness so ungraciously.

When we were taking leave, my eyes accidentally meeting his, I could not but observe that his gravity equalled my own; for it had entirely taken place of the smiles and good humour with which he had

met me.

"I am afraid this young Lady," faid Mrs. Beaumont, "is too weak for another long walk till she

is again rested."

"If the ladies will trust to my driving," said Lord Orville, "and are not asraid of a phaeton, mine shall be ready in a moment."

"You are very good, my Lord," faid Mrs. Selwyn, "but my will is yet unfigned, and I don't chuse to venture in a phaeton with a young man while that is the case."

"O," cried Mrs. Beaumont, "you need not be afraid of my Lord Orville, for he is remarkably

careful."

"Well, Miss Anville," answered she, "what

fay you?"

ked How ided

eed,

"Indeed," cried I, "I had much rather walk—"
But then, looking at Lord Orville, I perceived in
his face a furprife fo ferious at my abrupt refusal,
that I could not forbear adding, "for I should be

forry to occasion so much trouble."

Lord Orville; brightening at these words, came forward, and pressed his offer in a manner not to be denied;—so the phaeton was ordered! And indeed, my dear Sir,—I know not how it was;—but; from that moment, my coldness and reserve insensibly wore away! You must not be angry,—it was my intention, nay, my endeavour, to support them with firmness; but when I formed the plan, I thought only of the letter,—not of Lord Orville!—and how is it possible for resentment to subsist without provocation? yet, believe me, my dearest Sir, had he sustained the part he began to act when he wrote the ever-to-be-regretted letter, your Evelina would not have forseited her title to your esseem, by contentedly submitting to be treated with indignity.

We continued in the garden till the phaeton was ready. When we parted from Mrs. Beaumont, she repeated her invitation to Mrs. Selwyn to accept an apartment in her house; but the reason I have already mentioned made it be again declined.

Lord Orville drove very flow, and so cautiously, that, notwithstanding the height of the phaeton, sear would have been ridiculous. I supported no part in the conversation; but Mrs. Selwyn extremely well supplied the place of two. Lord Orville himself

did not speak much; but the excellent sense and refined good-breeding which accompany every word he utters, give value and weight to whatever he fays.

"I suppose, my Lord," faid Mrs. Selwyn, when we stopped at our lodgings, "you would have been extremely confused had we met any gentlemen who have the honour of knowing you."

"If I had," answered he gallantly, "it would have been from mere compassion at their envy."

"No, my Lord," answered she, "it would have been from mere shame, that, in an age so daring, you alone should be such a coward as to for-

bear to frighten women."

"O," cried he, laughing, "when a man is in a fright for himself, the ladies cannot but be in security; for you have not had half the apprehension for the fafety of your perfons, that I have for that of my heart." He then alighted, handed us out, took leave, and again mounting the phaeton, was out of fight in a minute.

"Certainly," faid Mrs. Selwyn, when he was gone, "there must have been some mistake in the birth of that young man: he was, undoubtedly, defigned for the last age; for he is really polite!"

And now, my dear Sir, do not you think, according to the present situation of affairs, I may give up my refentment, without imprudence or impropriety? I hope you will not blame me. Indeed, had you, like me, feen his respectful behaviour, you would have been convinced of the impracticability of supporting any further indignation.

### TETTER XIX.

EVELINA in Continuation.

Bristol Hotwells, Sept 19th.

YESTERDAY morning Mrs. Selwyn received a card from Mrs. Beaumont, to ask her to dine with her to-day; and another, to the same purpose, came to me. The invitation was accepted, and we are

but just arrived from Clifton-Hill.

We found Mrs. Beaumont alone in the parlour. I will write you the character of that lady, in the words of our fatyrical friend Mrs. Selwyn. "She is an-44 abfolute Court Calendar bigot; for, chancing herfelf " to be born of a noble and ancient family, she 46 thinks proper to be of opinion, that birth and vir-" tue are one and the fame thing. She has fome " good qualities; but they rather originate from " pride than principle, as fhe piques herfelf upon "being too high born to be capable of an unworthy "action, and thinks it incumbent upon her to sup-" port the dignity of her ancestry. Fortunately for " the world in general, she has taken it into her " head, that condescension is the most distinguishing " virtue of high life; fo that the same pride of fami-" ly which renders others imperious, is with her " the motive of affability. But her civility is too formal " to be comfortable, and too mechanical to be flatter-"ing. That she does me the honour of so much no-" tice, is merely owing to an accident, which, I am " fure, is very painful to her remembrance; for it so "happened that I once did her fome fervice, in " regard to an apartment at Southampton; and I "have fince been informed, that at the time she ac-" cepted my affistance, she thought I was a woman " of quality; and I make no doubt but she was mi-" ferable when the discovered me to be a mere coun-"try gentlewoman: however, her nice notions of " decorum have made her load me with favours ever " fince. But I am not much flattered by her civi-"lities, as I am convinced I owe them neither to attachment nor gratitude; but folely to a defire of " cancelling an obligation, which she cannot brook being under, to one whose name is no where to " be found in the Court Calendar."

You well know, my dear Sir, the delight this lady takes in giving way to her fatyrical humour.

Mrs.

Mrs. Beaumont received us very graciously, tho she somewhat distressed me by the questions she asked concerning my family; - fuch as, Whether I was related to the Anvilles in the North?-Whether fome of my name did not live in Lincolnshire? and many other inquiries, which much embarrafied

The conversation next turned upon the intended marriage in her familly. She treated the subject with referve; but it was evident fhe disapproved Lady Louisa's choice. She spoke in terms of the highest esteem of Lord Orville, calling him, in Marmontel's

words, Un jeune homme comme il y en a peu.

I did not think this conversation very agreeably interrupted by the entrance of Mr. Lovel. Indeed I' am heartily forry he is now at the Hot-wells. He made his compliments with the must obsequious respect to Mrs. Beaumont, but took no fort of notice of

any other person.

In a few minutes Lady Louisa Larpent made her appearance. The fame manners prevailed; for courtefying, with, "I hope you are well, Ma'am," to Mrs. Beaumont, the passed straight forward to her feat on the fofa; where, leaning her head on her hand, the cast her languishing eyes round the room, with a vacant stare, as if determined, tho the looked, not to fee who was in it.

Mr. Lovel, prefently approaching her, with reverence the most profound, hoped her Ladyship was

not indisposed.

"Mr. Lovel!" cried she, raising her head, "I declare I did not fee you : Have you been here long?"

By my watch, Madam," faid he, " only five minutes,-but by your Ladythip's absence, as many hours."

"O! now I think of it," cried she, " I am very angry with you ;- so go along, do; for I shan't fpeak to you all day."

"Heaven forbid your La'ship's displeasure should last so long! in such cruel circumstances, a day

would

would feem an age. But in what have I been for unfortunate as to offend?"

"O, you half killed me, the other morning, with terror! I have not yet recovered from my fright. How could you be fo cruel as to drive your phaeton

against my Lord Merton's?"

Pon honour, Ma'am, your La'ship does me wrong; it was all owing to the horses,-there was no curbing them. I protest I suffered more than your Ladyship, from the terror of alarming you,"

Just then entered Lord Merton; stalking up to Mrs. Beaumont, to whom alone he bowed, he hoped he had not made their wait; and then advancing to Lady Louisa, said, in a careless manner, "How is your Ladyship this morning?"

"Not well at all," answered she; "I have been dying with the head-ach ever fince I got up."

"Indeed!" cried he, with a countenance wholly unmoved, "I am very unhappy to hear it. should not your Ladyship have some advice?"

"I am quite fick of advice," answered she, "Mr. Ridgeway has but just left me, but he has done me no good. Nobody here knows what is the matter with me, yet they all fee how indifferent I am."

"Your Ladyship's constitution," faid Mr. Lovel,

" is infinitely delicate."

and I

"Indeed it is," cried she, in a low voice, "I am nerve all over!"

"I am glad, however," faid Lord Merton, "that you did not take the air this morning, for Coverley has been driving against me as if he was mad: he has got two of the finest spirited horses I ever saw."

"Pray, my Lord," cried the, "why did not you bring Mr. Coverley with you? he's a droll creature;

I like him monstrously."

"Why, he promised to be here as soon as me. I

suppose he'll come before dinner's over."

In the midst of this trifling conversation Lord Orville made his appearance. Q how different was his address! how superior did he look and move, to all about him! Having paid his respects to Mrs. Beaumont, and then to Mrs. Selwyn, he came up to me, and said, "I hope Miss Anville has not suffered from the satigue of Monday morning!" Then turning to Lady Louisa, who seemed rather surprised at his speaking to me, he added, "Give me leave, Sister, to introduce Miss Anville to you."

Lady Louisa, half-rising, said, very coldly, that she should be glad of the honour of knowing me; and then, abruptly turning to Lord Merton and Mr. Lovel, continued, in a half-whisper, her conversation.

For my part, I had rifen and courtefy'd, and now feeling very foolish, I feated myself again; first I blushed at the unexpected politeness of Lord Orville, and immediately afterwards at the contemptuous failure of it in his sister. How can that young lady see her brother so universally admired for his manners and deportment, and yet be so unamiably opposite to him in her's! But while his mind, enlarged and noble, rises superior to the little prejudices of rank, her's, seeble and unsteady, sinks beneath their influence.

Lord Orville, I am fore, was hurt and displeased: he bit his lips, and turning from her, addressed himself wholly to me, till we were summoned to dinner. Do you think I was not grateful for his attention? yes, indeed, and every angry idea I

had entertained, was totally obliterated.

As we were feating ourselves at the table, Mr. Coverley came into the room: he made a thousand apologies in a breath for being so late, but said he had been retarded by a little accident, for that he had overturned his phaeton, and broke it all to pieces. Lady Louisa screamed at this intelligence, and looking at Lord Merton, declared she would never go into a phaeton again.

"O," cried he, "never mind Jack Coverley;

for he does not know how to drive."

"My Lord," cried Mr. Coverley, "I'll drive a-gainst you for a thousand pounds."

" Done!"

"Done!" returned the other; "name your day, and we'll each choose a judge."

"The fooner the better," cried Mr. Coverley;

" to-morrow, if the carriage can be repaired."

"These enterprises," faid Mrs. Selwyn, "are very proper for men of rank, since 'tis a million to one but both parties will be incapacitated for any better employment."

colour, "don't talk fo shockingly! Pray, my Lord, pray, Mr. Coverley, don't alarm me in this manner."

"Compose yourself, Lady Louisa," said Mrs. Beaumont, "the gentlemen will think better of the scheme; they are neither of them in earnest."

"The very mention of fuch a fcheme," faid Lady Louisa, taking out her salts, "makes me tremble all over! Indeed, my Lord, you have frightened me to death! I sha'n't eat a morfel of dinner."

"Permit me," faid Lord Orville, "to propose some other subject for the present, and we will dis-

cufs this matter another time."

"Pray, Brother, excuse me; my Lord must give me his word to drop this project,—for I de-

clare it has made me fick as death."

"To compromife the matter," faid Lord Orville, "fuppose, if both parties are unwilling to give up the bet, that, to make the ladies easy, we change its object to something less dangerous?"

This proposal was so strongly seconded by all the party, that both Lord Merton and Mr. Coverley were obliged to comply with it; and it was then agreed that the affair should be finally settled in the afternoon.

"I shall now be entirely out of conceit with phaetons again," faid Mrs. Selwyn, "tho' Lord

Orville had almost reconciled me to them."

"My Lord Orville!" cried the witty Mr. Coverley, "why, my Lord Orville is as careful,—egad, as careful as an old woman! Why, I'd drive a one-horse cart against my Lord's phaeton for a hundred guineas!"

This.

This fally occasioned much laughter; for Mr. Coverley, I find, is regarded as a man of infinite humour.
"Perhaps, Sir," faid Mrs. Selwyn, "you have not

discovered the reason my Lord Orville is so careful?"
"Why, no, Ma'am; I must own I never heard
any particular reason for it."

"Why, then, Sir, I'll tell it you; and I believe you will confess it to be very particular: his Lord-

thip's friends are not yet tired of him."

Lord Orville laughed and bowed. Mr. Coverley, a little confused, turned to Lord Merton, and faid, "No foul play, my Lord! I remember your Lordship recommended me to the notice of this lady the other morning, and, egad, I believe you have been doing me the same office to-day."

"Give you joy, Jack!" cried Lord Merton, with

a loud laugh.

After this, the conversation turned wholly upon eating, a fubject which was discussed with the utmost delight; and, had I not known they were men of rank and fashion, I should have imagined that Lord Merton, Mr. Lovel, and Mr. Coverley, had all been professed cooks; for they displayed so much knowledge of fauces and made-diffies, and of the various methods of dreffing the fame things, that I am perfuaded they must have given much time, and much study, to make themselves such adepts in this art. It would be very difficult to determine, whether they were most to be diffinguished as gluttons or epicures; for they were, at once, dainty and voracious, understood the right and the wrong of every dish, and alike emptied the one and the other. I should have been quite sick of their remarks, had I not been entertained by feeing that Lord Orville, who, I am fure, was equally difgusted, not only read my fentiments, but, by his countenance, communicated to me his own.

When dinner was over, Mrs. Beaumont recommended the gentlemen to the care of Lord Orville, and then attended the ladies to the drawing-room.

The

The conversation, till tea-time, was extremely infipid; Mrs. Selwyn reserved herself for the gentlemen, Mrs. Beaumont was grave, and Lady Louisa languid.

But, at tea, every body revived; we were joined by the gentlemen, and gaiety took place of dullness.

Since I, as Mr. Lovel fays, am Nobody \*, I feated myfelf quietly at a window, and not very near to any body: Lord Merton, Mr. Coverley, and Mr. Lovel, feverally passed me without notice, and surrounded the chair of Lady Louisa Larpent. I must own, I was rather piqued at the behaviour of Mr. Lovel, as he had formerly known me. It is true, I most fincerely despise his soppery; yet I should be grieved to meet with contempt from any body. But I was by no means. forry to find, that Lord Merton was determined not to know me before Lady Louisa, as his neglect relieved me from much embarrassment. As to Mr. Coverley, his attention or difregard were equally indifferent to me. Yet, altogether, I felt extremely uncomfortable in finding myfelf confidered in a light very inferior to the rest of the company.

But when Lord Orville appeared, the scene changed: he came up stairs last, and seeing me sit alone, not only spoke to me directly, but drew a chair next mine, and honoured me with his entire attention.

He enquired very particularly after my health, and hoped I had already found benefit from the Bristol air. "How little did I imagine," added he, "when I had last the pleasure of seeing you in town, that ill health would in so short a time have brought you kither! I am ashamed of myself for the satisfaction I feel at seeing you,—yet, how can I help it!"

He then enquired after the Mirvan family, and fpoke of Mrs. Mirvan in terms of most just praise. "She is gentle and amiable," said he, "a true se-

minine character."

"Yes, indeed," answered I; "and her sweet daughter, to say every thing of her at once, is just the daughter such a mother deserves."

"I am glad of it," faid he; "for both their fakes, as fuch near relations must always reslect

credit or difgrace on each other."

After this he began to speak of the beauties of Clifton; but, in a few moments, he was interrupted by a call from the company to discuss the affair of the wager. Lord Merton and Mr. Coverley, though they had been discoursing upon the subject some time, could not fix upon the thing that satisfied them both.

When they asked the affistance of Lord Orville, he proposed that every body present should vote something; and that the two gentlemen should draw lots which, from the several votes, should decide the bet.

"We must then begin with the ladies," faid

Lord Orville; and applied to Mrs. Selwyn.

"With all my heart," answered she, with her usual readiness; "and, since the gentlemen are not allowed to risk their necks, suppose we decide the bet by their heads?"

"By our heads?" cried Mr. Coverley; " Egad,

I don't understand you."

"I will then explain myfelf more fully. As I doubt not but you are both excellent claffics, fuppofe, for the good of your own memories, and the entertainment and furprife of the company, the thousand pounds should fall to the share of him who can repeat by heart the longest ode of Horace?"

Nobody could help laughing, the two gentlemen applied to excepted; who feemed, each of them, rather at a lofs in what manner to receive this unexpected propofal. At length Mr. Coverley, bowing low, faid, "Will your Lordship please to begin?"

"Devil take me if I do!" answered he, turning

on his heel, and stalking to the window.

"Come, gentlemen," faid Mrs. Selwyn, "why do you hesitate? I am sure you cannot be afraid of a weak woman? Besides, if you should chance to be out, Mr. Lovel, I dare say, will have the goodness to assist you."

The laugh now turned against Mr. Lovel, whose change

change of countenance manifested no great pleasure at the transition.

"Me, Madam!" faid he colouring; "no, really

I must beg to be excused."
"Why so, Sir?"

"Why fo, Ma'am?—Why, really—as to that,— 'pen honour, Ma'am, you are rather—a little severe;—for how is it possible for a man who is in the House, to study the classics? I assure you, Ma'am (with an affected shrug), I find quite business enough for my poor head in studying politics."

"But, did you study politics at school, and at the

university?"

W OS

, 19

nd the

lemo

OWIL

you. whole

"At the university!" repeated he with an embarrassed look; "why, as to that, Ma'am,—no, I can't say I did; but then, what with riding,—and—and—and so forth,—really one has not much time even at the university, for mere reading."

"But, to be fure, Sir, you have read the classics?"
"O dear, yes, Ma'am!—very often,—but not

very—not very lately."

"Which of the odes do you recommend to

these gentlemen to begin with?"

"Which of the odes!—Really, Ma'am, as to that, I have no particular choice;—for, to own the truth, that Horace was never a very great favourite with me."

"In truth I believe you!" faid Mrs. Selwyn

very drily.

Lord Merton, again advancing into the circle, with a nod and a laugh, said, "Give you joy, Lovel!"

Lord Orville next applied to Mrs. Beaumont for her vote.

"It would very agreeably remind me of past times," said she, "when bowing was in fashion, if the bet was to depend upon the best-made bow."

"Egad, my Lord," cried Mr. Coverley, "there I should beat you hollow, for your Lordship never

bows at all."

" And pray, Sir, do you?" faid Mrs. Selwyn.

"Do I, Ma'am?" cried he; "why, only fee!" "I protest," cried she, "I should have taken that for a shrug, if you had not told me 'twas a bow."

"My Lord," cried Mr. Coverley, "let's practife;" and then, most ridiculously, they pranced about the room, making bows.

"We must now," faid Lord Orville, turning to

me, " call upon Mifs Anville."

"O no, my Lord," cried I; "indeed I have nothing to propose." He would not, however, be refused; but urged fo much to fay fomething, that at last, not to make him wait any longer, I ventured to propole an extempore couplet upon some given subject.

Mr. Coverley instantly made me a bow, or, according to Mrs. Selwyn, a shrug, crying, "Thank you, Ma'am; egad, that's my fort!-Why, my

Lord, the Fates feem against you."

Lady Louisa was then applied to; and every body feemed eager to hear her opinion. "I don't know what to fay, I declare," cried she affectedly; " can't you pass me?"

" By no means," faid Lord Merton.

"Is it possible your Ladyship can make so cruel

a request?" faid Mr. Lovel.

"Egad," cried Mr. Coverley, " if your Ladyship does not help us in this dilemma, we shall be forced to return to our phaetons."

"Oh!" cried Lady Louisa, screaming, "you frightful creature, you, how can you be so abominable?"

I believe this trifling lasted near half an hour; when at length, every body being tired, it was given up, and the faid the would confider against another time.

Lord Orville now called upon Mr. Lovel; who, after about ten minutes deliberation, proposed, with a most important face, to determine the wager by who should draw the longest straw!

I had much difficulty to forbear laughing at this unmeaning scheme; but faw, to my great surprise, not the least change of countenance in any other person:

person: and, fince we came home, Mrs. Selwyn has informed me, that to draw straws is a fashion of betting by no means uncommon. Good God! my dear Sir, does it not feem as if money were of no value or fervice, fince those who posses, squander

it away in a manner fo infinitely abfurd?

It now only remained for Lord Orville to speak; and the attention of the company shewed the expectations he had raifed; yet, I believe, they by no means prevented his propofal from being heard with amazement; for it was no other, than that the money should be his due, who, according to the opinion of the judges, should bring the worthiest object with whom to share it!

They all stared, without speaking. Indeed, I believe every one, for a moment at least, experienced fomething like shame, from having either proposed or countenanced an extravagance so useless and frivolous. For my part, I was so much struck and affected by a rebuke fo noble to these spendthrifts, that I felt my eyes filled with tears.

The short silence, and momentary reflection into which the company was furprifed, Mr. Coverley was the first to dispel, by faying, "Egad, my Lord, your Lordship has a most remarkable odd

way of taking things."

"Faith," said the incorrigible Lord Merton, "if this scheme takes, I shall fix upon my Swifs to share with me; for I don't know a worthier fellow-breathing."

After a few more of these attempts at wit, the two gentlemen agreed that they would fettle the

affair the next morning.

The conversation then took a different turn; but I did not give it sufficient attention to write any account of it. Not long after, Lord Orville, refinning his feat near mine, faid, "Why is Miss Anville fo thoughtful?"

"I am forry, my Lord," faid I, "to confider myfelf among those who have so justly incurred your censure."

" My censure!—you amaze me!"

VOL. II. " Indeed, "Indeed, my Lord, you have made me quite ashamed of myself for having given my vote so foolishly, when an opportunity offered, if, like your Lordship, I had had the sense to use it, of showing some humanity."

"You treat this too feriously," said he, smiling; and I hardly know if you do not now mean a

rebuke to me.'

"To you, my Lord!"

"Nay, who are most deserving of it; those who adapt the conversation to the company, or those who affect to be superior to it?"

"O, my Lord, who else would do you so little

justice!"

"I flatter myself," answered he, "that, in fact, your opinion and mine, in this point, are the same, though you condescended to comply with the humour of the company. It is for me, therefore, to apologize for so unseasonable a gravity, which, but for the particular interest that I now take in the affairs of Lord Merton, I should not have been so officious to display."

Such a compliment as this could not fail to reconcile me to myself; and, with revived spirits, I entered into a conversation, which he supported with me till Mrs. Selwyn's carriage was announced;

and we returned home.

During our ride, Mrs. Selwyn very much surprised me, by asking, if I thought my health would now permit me to give up my morning-walks to the pumproom, for the purpose of spending a week at Cliston? "for this poor Mrs. Beaumont," added she, "is so eager to have a discharge in sull of her debt to me, that, out of mere compassion, I am induced to listen to her. Besides, she has always a house full of people; and though they are chiefly sools and coxcombs, yet there is some pleasure in cutting them up."

I begged, I might not, by any means, prevent her following her inclination, as my health was now very well established. And so, my dear Sir, to-morrow we are to be actually the guests of Mrs. Beaumont.

I am

I am not much delighted at this scheme; for, greatly as I am flattered by the attention of Lord Orville, it is not very comfortable to be neglected by every body else. Besides, as I am sure I owe the particularity of his civility to a generous feeling for my situation, I cannot expect him to support it so long as a week.

How often do I wish, since I am absent from you, that I was under the protection of Mrs. Mirvan! It is true, Mrs. Selwyn is very obliging, and, in every respect, treats me as an equal; but she is contented with behaving well herself, and does not, with a distinguishing politeness, raise and support me with others. Yet I mean not to blame her, for I know she is sincerely my friend; but the fact is, she is herself so much occupied in conversation, when in company, that she has neither leisure nor thought to attend to the filent.

Well, I must take my chance! But I knew not, till now, how requisite are birth and fortune to the attainment of respect and civility.

#### LETTER XX.

EVELINA in Continuation.

Clifton, Sept. 20.

HERE I am, my dear Sir, under the fame roof, and inmate of the fame house, as Lord Orville! Indeed, if this were not the case, my situation would be very disagreeable, as you will easily believe, when I tell you the light in which I am generally considered.

"My dear," faid Mrs. Selwyn, "did you ever before meet with that egregious fop, Lovel?"

I very readily fatisfied her as to my acquaintance with him.

"O then," faid she, "I am the less surprised at his ill-nature, since he has already injured you."

I begged her to explain herfelf; and then she told me, that while Lord Orville was speaking to me, Lady Louisa said to Mr. Lovel, "Do you know who that is?" "Why, Ma'am, no, 'pon honour," answered he, "I can't absolutely fay I do; I only know she is a kind of a toad-eater. She made her first appearance in that capacity last spring, when she attended

Miss Mirvan, a young lady of Kent."

How cruel is it, my dear Sir, to be thus exposed to the impertinent suggestions of a man who is determined to do me ill offices! Lady Louisa may well despise a toad-eater; but, thank Heaven, her brother has not heard, or does not credit, the mortifying appellation. Mrs. Selwyn said, she would advise me to pay my court to this Mr. Lovel; "for," said she, "though he is malicious, he is fashionable, and may do you some harm in the great world." But I should distain myself as much as I do him, were I capable of such duplicity as to flatter a man whom I scorn and despise.

We were received by Mrs. Beaumont with great civility, and by Lord Orville with fomething more. As to Lady Louisa, she scarcely perceived that we

were in the room.

There has been company here all day, part of which I have spent most happily: for, after tea, when the ladies played at cards, Lord Orville who does not, and I who cannot play, were consequently at our own disposal; and then his Lordship entered into a conversation with me, which lasted till supper-time.

Almost insensibly, I find the constraint, the referve, I have been wont to feel in his presence, wear away; the politoness, the sweetness, with which he speaks to me, restore all my natural cheerfulness, and make me almost as easy as he is himself; and the more so, as, if I may judge by his looks, I am rather raised, than sunk, of late in his opinion.

I asked him how the bet was, at last, to be decided? He told me, that, to his great satisfaction, the parties had been prevailed upon to lower the sum from one thousand to one hundred pounds; and that they had agreed it should be determined by a race between two old woman, one of which

was

was to be chosen by each fide, and both were to be proved more than eighty years of age, though, in other respects, strong and healthy as possible.

When I expressed my surprise at this extraordinary method of spending so much money, "I am charmed," said he, "at the novelty of meeting with one so unhackneyed in the world, as not to be yet influenced by custom to forget the use of reason: for certain it is, that the prevalence of fashion makes the greatest absurdates itself even to the most ridiculous improprieties, if they occur frequently."

"I should have hoped," faid I, "that the humane proposal made yesterday by your Lordship,

would have had more effect."

"O," cried he, laughing, "I was so far from expecting any success, that I shall think myself very fortunate if I escape the wit of Mr. Coverley in a lampoon! yet I spoke openly, because I do not wish to conceal that I am no friend to gaming."

After this, he took up the new Bath Guide, and read it with me till supper-time. In our way down stairs, Lady Louisa said, "I thought, Brother, you

were engaged this evening?"

at W

art o

WIC

into

Wea

20

1.

WA

"Yes, Sister," answered he, "and I have been engaged." And he bowed to me with an air of gallantry that rather confused me.

Sept. 23d.

Almost infensibly have three days glided on since I wrote last, and so serenely, that, but for your absence, I could not have formed a wish. My residence here is much happier than I had dared expect. The attention with which Lord Orville honours me, is as uniform as it is flattering, and seems to result from a benevolence of heart that proves him as much a stranger to caprice as to pride; for, as his particular civilities arose from a generous resentmental seeing me neglected, so will they, I trust, continue, as long as shall, in any degree, deserve them. I am now not merely

easy, but even gay in his presence: such is the effect of true politeness, that it banishes all restraint and embarraffinent. When we walk out, he condefcends to be my companion, and keeps by my fide all the way we go. When we read, he marks the passages most worthy to be noticed, draws out my fentiments, and favours me with his own. At table, where he always fits next to me, he obliges me by a thousand nameless attentions; while the diffinguishing good-breeding with which he treats me, prevents my repining at the visibly felt superiority of the rest of the company. A thousand occasional meetings could not have brought us to that degree of focial freedom, which four days fpent under the same roof have, insensibly, been productive of: and, as my only friend in this house, Mrs. Selwyn, is too much engrossed in perpetual conversation to attend much to me, Lord Orville feems to regard me as a helpless stranger, and, as such, to think me intitled to his good offices and protection. Indeed, my dear Sir, I have reason to hope, that the depreciating opinion he formerly entertained of me is fucceeded by one infinitely more partial .- It may be that I flatter myself; but yet his looks, his attentions, his desire of drawing me into conversation, and his solicitude to oblige me, all conspire to make me hope I do not. In short, my dearest Sir, these last four happy days would repay me for months of forrow and pain!

# LETTER XXI.

EVELINA in Continuation.

Clifton, Sept. 24.

This morning I came down stairs very early; and supposing that the family would not affemble for some time, I strolled out, purposing to take a long walk, in the manner I was wont to do at Berry Hill, before breakfast: but I had scarce shut the

the garden-gate, before I was met by a gentleman, who, immediately bowing to me, I recollected to be the unhappy Mr. Macartney. Very much furprifed, I courtefy'd, and stopped till he came up to me. He was still in mourning, but looked better than when I faw him last, tho' he had the same air of melancholy which fo much struck me at first fight of him.

Addressing me with the utmost respect, " I am happy, Madam," faid he, "to have met with you for foon. I came to Bristol but yesterday, and have had

no fmall difficulty in tracing you to Clifton."

"Did you know, then, of my being here?" " I did, Madam; the fole motive of my journey was too fee you. I have been to Berry Hill, and there I had my intelligence, and, at the fame time the unwelcome information of your ill health.

"Good God! Sir, - and can you possibly have

taken fo much trouble?"

"Trouble! O, Madam, could there be any, to return you, the moment I had the power, my per-

fonal acknowledgments for your goodness?"

I then enquired after Madame Duval, and the Snow-Hill family. He told me they were all well, and that Madame Duval proposed foon returning to Paris. When I congratulated him upon looking better, "It is yourfelf, Madam," faid he, " you should congratulate; for to your humanity alone it may now be owing that I exist at all." He then told me, that his affairs were now in a less desperate situation; and that he hoped, by the affiftance of time and reason, to accommodate his mind to a more cheerful submission to his fate. "The interest you fo generously took in my affliction," added he, " affures me you will not be displeased to hear of my better fortune; I was therefore eager to acquaint you with it." He then told me that his friend, the moment he had received his letter, quitted Paris, and flew to give him his personal affiltance and confolation. With a heavy heart, he acknowledged.

ledged, he accepted it; "but yet," he added, "I kave accepted it; and therefore, as bound equally by duty and honour, my first step was to hasten to the benefactress of my distress, and to return" (presenting me fomething in a paper) "the only part of my obligations that can be returned; for the rest, I have nothing but my gratitude to offer, and must always be contented to consider myself her debtor."

I congratulated him most fincerely upon his dawning prosperity, but begged he would not deprive me of the pleasure of being his friend; and declined receiving the money, till his affairs were more fettled.

While this point was in agitation, I heard Lord Orville's voice inquiring of the gardener if he had feen me? I immediately opened the garden-gate; and his Lordship, advancing to me with quickness, said, "Good God, Miss Anville, have you been out alone? Breakfast has been ready some time, and I have been round the garden in fearch of you."

"Your Lordship has been very good," faid I;

" but I hope you have not waited."

"Not waited!" repeated he smiling: "Do you think we could fit down quietly to breakfast, with the idea that you had run away from us? But come," (offering to hand me,) "if we do not return, they will fuppose Iam runaway too; and they very naturally may, as they know the attraction of the magnet that draws me."

"I will come, my Lord," faid I, rather embar-rassed, "in two minutes." Then, turning to Mr. Macartney, with yet more embarrassment, I wished

him good morning.

He advanced towards the garden, with the paper still in his hand.

"No, no," cried I, "fome other time."

" May I then, Madam, have the honour of feeing

you again?"

I did not dare take the liberty of inviting any body to the house of Mrs. Beaumont, nor yet had I the presence of mind to make an excuse; and, therefore,



not knowing how to refuse him, I said, "Perhaps you may be this way again to-morrow morning,—and I believe I shall walk out before breakfast."

He bowed, and went away; while I, turning again to Lord Orville, faw his countenance so much altered, that I was frightened at what I had so hastily said. He did not again offer me his hand; but walked, silent and slow, by my side. Good Heaven! thought I, what may he not suppose from that adventure? May he not, by my desire of meeting Mr. Macartney tomorrow, imagine it was by design I walked out to meet him to-day? Tormented by this apprehension, I determined to avail myself of the freedom which his behaviour, since I came hither, has encouraged; and, since he would not ask any questions, begin an explanation myself. I therefore slackened my pace to gain time; and then said, "Was not your Lordship surprised to see me speaking with a stranger?"

"A stranger!" repeated he; "is it possible that

gentleman can be a stranger to you?"

"No, my Lord,"—faid I, stammering, "not to me—but only it might look—he might seem—"

"No, believe me," faid he, with a forced smile, "I could never suppose Miss Anville would make an appointment with a stranger."

"An appointment, my Lord!" repeated I, co-

louring violently.

"Pardon me, Madam," answered he, "but I

thought I had heard one."

I was so much consounded, that I could not speak: yet, finding he walked quietly on, I could not endure he should make his own interpretation of my filence: and therefore, as soon as I recovered from my surprise, I said, "Indeed, my Lord, you are much mistaken, Mr. Macartney had particular business with me—and I could not—I knew not, how to retuse seeing him;—but indeed, my Lord—I had not,—he had not,"—I stammered so terribly that I could not go on.

"I am very forry," faid he, gravely, "that I have been fo unfortunate as to distress you; but I should not have followed you, had I not imagined

you were merely walked out for the air."

"And fo I was!" cried I eagerly, "indeed, my Lord, I was! My meeting with Mr. Macartney was quite accidental; and if your Lordship thinks there is any impropriety in my seeing him to-morrow, I am ready to give up that intention."

"If I think!" faid he, in a tone of furprise; "furely Miss Anville must best judge for herself! furely she cannot leave the arbitration of a point, so delicate, to one who is ignorant of all the cir-

cumflances which attend it?"

"If," faid I, "it was worth your Lordship's time to hear them,—you should not be ignorant of the

circumstances which attend it."

"The fweetness of Miss Anville's disposition," faid he in a softened voice, "I have long admired; and the offer of a communication, which does me so much honour, is to grateful to me not to be eagerly caught at."

Just then Mrs. Selwyn opened the parlour window, and our conversation ended. I was rallied upon my passion for solitary walking; but no que-

flions were asked me.

When breakfast was over, I hoped to have had some opportunity of speaking with Lord Orville; but Lord Merton and Mr. Coverley came in, and insisted upon his opinion of the spot they had fixed upon for the old women's race. The ladies declared they would be of the party; and accordingly we all went.

The race is to be run in Mrs. Beaumont's garden; the two gentlemen are as anxious, as if their joint lives depended upon it. They have at length fixed upon objects; but have found great difficulty in perfuading them to practife running, in order to try their strength. This grand affair is to be decided next Thursday.

When we returned to the house, the entrance of

more

more company still prevented my having any converfation with Lord Orville. I was very much chagrined, as I knew he was engaged at the Hotwells in the afternoon. Seeing, therefore, no probability of speaking to him before the time of my meeting Mr. Macartney arrived, I determined that, rather than risk his ill opinion, I would leave Mr. Macartney to his own suggestions.

Yet, when I reflected upon his peculiar fituation, his poverty, his fadness, and, more than all the rest, the idea I knew he entertained of what he calls his obligations to me, I could not resolve upon a breach of promise, which might be attributed to causes, of all others, the most offensive to one whom missfortune has made extremely suspicious of slights and contempt.

After the most uneasy consideration, I at length determined upon writing an excuse, which would, at once, save me from either meeting or affronting him. I therefore begged Mrs. Selwyn's leave to send her man to the Hotwells, which she instantly granted; and then I wrote the following note:

## "To Mr. Macariney.

" SIR,

"As it will not be in my power to walk out to-morrow morning, I would by no means give you the trouble of coming to Clifton. I hope, however, to have the pleafure of feeing you before you quit Briftol. I am,

"Your obedient servant, "EVELINA ANVILLE."

I defired the fervant to inquire at the pump-room where Mr. Macartney lived, and returned to the parlour.

As foon as the company dispersed, the ladies retired to dress. I then, unexpectedly, found myself alone with Lord Orville; who, the moment I rose to follow Mrs. Selwyn, advanced to me, and said, "Will Miss Anville pardon my impatience, if I remindher of the promise she was so good as to make me this morninge" I stopped,

I stopped, and would have returned to my feat; but before I had time, the fervants came to lay the cloth. He retreated, and went towards the window; and while I was confidering in what manner to begin, I could not help asking myself what right I had to communicate the affairs of Mr. Macartney; and I doubted whether, to clear myfelf from one act of imprudence. I had not committed another.

Distressed by this reflection, I thought it best to quit the room, and give myself some time for consideration before I spoke; and therefore, only faying I must hasten to dress, I ran up stairs: rather abruptly, I own; and so, I fear, Lord Orville must think. Yet what could I do? unufed to the fituations in which I find myfelf, and embarraffed by the flightest difficulties, I feldom, till to late, discover how I ought to act.

Just as we were all affembled to dinner, Mrs. Selwyn's man, coming into the parlour, prefented to me a letter, and faid, "I can't find out Mr. Macartney, Madam; but the post-office people will let

you know if they hear of him."

I was extremely ashamed of this public message; and, meeting the eyes of Lord Orville, which were earnestly fixed on me, my confusion redoubled, and I knew not which way to look. All dinner-time he was as silent as myself; and the moment it was in my power I left the table, and went to my own room. Mrs. Selwyn prefently followed me, and her queflions obliged me to own almost all the particulars of my acquaintance with Mr. Macartney, in order to excuse my writing to him. She faid it was a most romantic affair, and spoke her fentiments with great feverity; declaring, that she had no doubt but he was an adventurer and an impostor.

And now, my dear Sir, I am totally at a loss what I ought to do: the more I reflect, the more fensible I am of the utter impropriety, nay, treachery, of revealing the story, and publishing the misfortunes and poverty of Mr. Macartney; who has

an undoubted right to my fecrecy and discretion, and whose letter charges me to regard his communication as facred.—And yet, the appearance of mystery,-perhaps fomething worse, which this affair must have to Lord Orville, -his seriousness, -and the promise I have made him, are inducements fcarce to be refifted for trufting him with the openness he has reason to expect from me.

I am equally diffressed, too, whether or not I should see Mr. Macartney to-morrow morning.

Oh, Sir, could I now be enlightened by your counsel, from what anxiety and perplexity should I be relieved!

But no, - I ought not to betray Mr. Macartney, and I will not forfeit a confidence which would never have been reposed in me, but from a reliance upon my honour, which I should blush to find myself unworthy of. Defirous as I am of the good opinion of Lord Orville, I will endeavour to act as if I was guided by your advice; and, making it my fole aim to deferve it, leave to time and to fate my fuccess or disappointment.

Since I have formed this resolution, my mind is more at ease; but I will not finish my letter till the affair is decided.

Sept. 25th.

I rose very early this morning; and, after a thousand different plans, not being able to refolve upon giving poor Mr. Macartney leave to suppose I neglected him, I thought it incumbent upon me to keep my word, fince he had not received my letter; I therefore determined to make my own apologies, not to stay with him two minutes, and to excuse myself from meeting him any more.

Yet, uncertain whether I was wrong or right, it was with fear and trembling that I opened the garden-gate; -judge, then, of my feelings, when the first object I saw was Lord Orville !- he, too, looked extremely disconcerted, and said, in a hesitating manner, "Pardon me, Madam, -I did not intend, -I did

not imagine you would have been here fofoon-oror I would not have come."-And then, with a hafty bow, he passed me, and proceeded to the garden.

I was scarce able to stand, so greatly did I feel myfelf shocked; but upon my faying, almost involuntarily, "Oh, my Lord!"-he turned back, and, after a short pause, said, "Did you speak to me, Madam?"

I could not immediately answer; I seemed choaked; and was even forced to support myfelf by the garden-

gate.

Lord Orville, foon recovering his dignity, faid, "I know not how to apologife for being, just now, at this place ;- and I cannot immediately -- if ever-clearmyself from the imputation of impertinent curiofity, to which I fear you will attribute it: however, at prefent, I will only intreat your pardon, without detaining you any longer." Again he bowed and left me.

For fome moments I remained fixed to the same fpot, and in the fame polition, immoveably as if I had been transformed to a stone. My first impulse was to call him back, and instantly tell him the whole affair; but I checked this defire, though I would have given the world to have indulged it; fomething like pride aided what I thought due to Mr. Macartney, and I determined not only to keep his fecret, but to delay any fort of explanation till Lord Orville should condescend to request it.

Slowly he walked; and before he entered the house, he looked back, but hastily withdrew his

eyes, upon finding I observed him.

Indeed, my dear Sir, you cannot easily imagine a fituation more uncomfortable than mine was at that time; to be suspected by Lord Orville of any clandestine actions, wounded my foul; I was too much difcomposed to wait for Mr. Macartney, nor, in truth, could I endure to have the defign of my staying fo well known. Yet I was fo extremely agitated, that I could hardly move; and I have reason to believe LordOrville, from the parlour-window, law me tottering along; for, before I had taken five steps, he came out, and hastening to meet me, said, "I fear you are not well; pray allow me (offering his arm) to assist you."

" No, my Lord," faid I, with all the refolution I could affume; yet I was affected by an attention, at that time fo little expected, and forced to turn

away my head to conceal my emotion.

"You must," faid he, with earnestness, indeed you must,—I am sure you are not well;—resuse me not the honour of assisting you;" and, almost forcibly, he took my hand, and drawing it under his arm, obliged me to lean upon him. That I submitted was partly the effect of surprise at an earnestness so uncommon in Lord Orville, and partly, that I did not, just then, dare trust my voice to make any objection.

When we came to the house, he led me into the parlour, and to a chair, and begged to know if I

would not have a glass of water.

"No, my Lord, I thank you," faid I, "I am perfectly recovered;" and, rifing, I walked to the window, where, for some time, I pretended to be

occupied in looking at the garden.

Determined as I was to act honourably by Mr. Macartney, I yet most anxiously wished to be reftored to the good opinion of Lord Orville; but his filence, and the thoughtfulness of his air, discouraged me from speaking.

My situation soon grew disagreeable and embarrassing, and I resolved to return to my chamber till breakfast was ready. To remain longer, I seared might seem asking for his enquiries; and I was sure it would ill become me to be more eager to speak, than he was to hear.

Just as I reached the door, turning to me hastily, he faid, "Are you going, Miss Anville?"

"I am, my Lord," answered I; yet I stopped.
"Perhaps to return to—but I beg your pardon!"
He spoke with a degree of agitation that made me readily comprehend he meant to the garden; and I instantly said, "To my own room, my Lord." And

again I would have gone; but, convinced by my answer that I understood him, I believe he was sorry for the infinuation: he approached me with a very serious air, though at the same time he forced a smile, and said, "I know not what evil genius pursues me this morning, but I seem destined to do or to say something I ought not: I am so much ashamed of myself, that I can scarce solicit your forgiveness."

"My forgiveness! my Lord?" cried I, abashed, rather than elated by his condescension; "furely

you cannot-you are not ferious?"

"Indeed never more so; yet, if I may be my own interpreter, Miss Anville's countenance pronounces my pardon."

"I know not, my Lord, how any one can par-

don, who never has been offended."

"You are very good; yet I could expect no less from a sweetness of disposition which baffles all comparison: will you not think I am an encroacher, and that I take advantage of your goodness, should I once more remind you of the promise you vouchsafed me yesterday?"

"No, indeed; on the contrary, I shall be very happy to acquit myself in your Lordship's opinion."

"Acquittal you need not," faid he, leading me again to the window; "yet I own my curiofity is

strongly excited."

When I was feated, I found myfelf much at a lofs what to fay; yet, after a short silence, assuming all the courage in my power, "Will you not, my Lord," faid I, "think me trisling and capricious, should I own I have repented the promise I made, and should I intreat your Lordship not to insist upon my strict performance of it?—I spoke so hastily, that I did not, at the time, consider the impropriety of what I said."

Ashe was entirely filent, and profoundly attentive,

I continued to speak without interruption.

"If your Lordship, by any other means, knew the circumstances attending my acquaintance with Mr.

Macartney.

Macartney, I am most sure you would yourself disapprove my relating them. He is a gentleman, and has been very unfortunate;—but I am not—I think,—at liberty to say more: yet I am sure, if he knew your Lordship wished to hear any particulars of his assairs, he would readily consent to my acknowledging them;—shall I, my Lord, ask his permission?"

"His affairs!" repeated Lord Orville; "by no means, I have not the least curiosity about them."

"I beg your Lordship's pardon, -but indeed I

had understood the contrary."

" Is it possible, Madam, you could suppose the affairs of an utter stranger can excite my curiosity?"

The gravity and coldness with which heasked this question, very much abashed me. But Lord Orville is the most delicate of men, and, presently recollecting himself, he added, "I mean not to speak with indifference of any friend of your's,—far from it; any such will always command my good wishes; yet I own I am rather disappointed; and though I doubt not the justice of your reason, to which I implicitly submit, you must not wonder, that when, upon the point of being honoured with your considence, I should seel the greatest regret at finding it withdrawn."

Do you think, my dear sir, I did not, at that moment, require all my resolution to guard me from frankly telling him whatever he wished to hear? yet I rejoice that I did not; for, added to the actual wrong I should have done, Lord Orville himself, when he had heard, would, I am sure, have blamed me. Fortunately, this thought occurred to me; and I said, "Your Lordship shall yourself be my judge; the promise I made, though voluntary, was rash and inconsiderate; yet, had it concerned myself, I would not have hesitated in sulfilling it; but the gentleman, whose affairs I should be obliged to relate—"

"Pardon, me," cried he, "for interrupting you; yet allow me to affure you, I have not the flightest desire to be acquainted with his affairs, further than what belongs to the motives which induced you yes-

yesterday morning-" He stopped; but there was

ne occasion to say more.

"That, my Lord," cried I, "I will tell youhonestly. Mr. Macartney had some particular business with me, and I could not take the liberty to ask him hither."

"And why not?-Mrs. Beaumont, I am fure-"

"I could not, my Lord, think of intruding upon Mrs. Beaumont's complaifance; and fo, with the fame hafty folly I promifed your Lordship, I much more rashly promised to meet him."

" And did you?"

"No, my Lord," faid I, colouring, "I returned before he came."

Again, for some time, we were both silent; yet, unwilling to leave him to reflections which could not but be to my disadvantage, I summoned sufficient courage to say, "There is no young creature, my Lord, who so greatly wants, or so earnestly wishes for, the advice and affistance of her friends, as I do: I am new to the World, and unused to acting for mysfelf;—my intentions are never wilfully blameable, yet I err perpetually!—I have hitherto been blessed with the most affectionate of friends, and, indeed, the ablest of men, to guide and instruct me upon every occasion:—but he is too distant, now, to be applied to at the moment I want his aid:—and here,—there is not a human being whose counsel I can ask."

"Would to Heaven," cried he, with a countenance from which all coldness and gravity were banished, and succeeded by the mildest benevolence, "that I were worthy,—and capable,—of supplying the place

of fuch a friend to Miss Anville!"

"You do me but too much honour," faid I, "yet I hope your Lordship's candour,—perhaps I ought to fay indulgence.—will make fome allowance, on account of my inexperience, for behaviour so inconfiderate:—May I, my Lord, hope that you will?"

"May I," cried he, hope that you will pardon the ill-grace with which I have submitted to my difappointment? and that you will permit me (kiffing my hand) thus to feal my peace?"

"Our peace, my Lord!" faid I, with revived spirits.
"This, then," faid he, again pressing it to his lips,
for our peace: and now,—are we not friends?"

Just then the door opened, and I had only time to withdraw my hand, before the ladies came in to breakfast.

I have been, all day, the happiest of human beings!—to be thus reconciled to Lord Orville, and yet to adhere to my resolution,—what could I wish for more?—he too has been very cheerful, and more attentive, more obliging to me than ever. Yet Heaven forbid I should again be in a similar situation, for I cannot express how much uneasiness I have suffered from the fear of incurring his ill opinion.

But what will poor Mr. Macartney think of me? happy as I am, I much regret the necessity I have been under of disappointing him.

Adieu, my dearest Sir.

# LETTER XXII. Mr. VILLARS to EVELINA.

Berry Hill, Sept. 28.

DEAD to the world, and equally infensible to its pleasures or its pains, I long fince bid adieu to all joy, and defiance to all forrow, but what should spring from my Evelina,—sole source, to me, of all earthly felicity. How strange, then, is it, that the letter in which she tells me she is the happies of human beings, should give me the most mortal inquietude!

Alas, my child!—that innocence, the first, best gift of Heaven, should, of all others, be the blindest to its own danger,—the most exposed to treachery,—and the least able to defend itself, in a world where it is little known, less valued, and perpetually deceived!

Would to Heaven you were here!—then, by degrees, and with gentleness, I might enter upon a subject fubject too delicate for distant discussion. Yet is it too interesting, and the situation too critical, to allow of delay.—Oh, my Evelina, your situation is critical indeed!—your peace of mind is at stake, and every chance for your future happiness may depend upon the conduct of the present moment.

Hitherto I have forborne to speak with you upon the most important of all concerns, the state of your heart:—alas, I need no information! I have been silent, indeed, but I have not been blind.

Long, and with the deepest regret, have I perceived the ascendancy which Lord Orville has gained upon your mind.—You will start at the mention of his name,—you will tremble every word you read;—I grieve to give pain to my gentle Evelina,

but I dare not any longer spare her.

Your first meeting with Lord Orville was decisive. Lively, fearless, free from all other impressions, such a man as you describe him could not fail exciting your admiration; and the more dangerously, because he seemed as unconscious of his power, as you of your weakness; and therefore you had no alarm, either from bis vanity or your own prudence.

Young, animated, entirely off your guard, and thoughtless of consequences, Imagination took the reins; and Reason, slow-paced, though sure-stooted, was unequal to a race with so eccentric and slighty a companion. How rapid was then my Evelina's progress through those regions of sancy and passion whither her new guide conducted her!—She saw Lord Orville at a ball,—and he was the most amiable of men!—She met him again at another,—and he had every virtue under heaven!

I mean not to depreciate the merit of Lord Orville, who, one mysterious instance alone excepted, seems to have deserved the idea you formed of his character: but it was not time, it was not the knowledge of his worth, obtained your regard; your new comrade had not patience to wait any trial; her glowing

pencil,

pencil, dipt in the vivid colours of her creative ideas, painted to you, at the moment of your first acquaintance, all the excellencies, all the good and rare qualities, which a great length of time and intimacy could alone have really discovered.

You flattered yourfelf, that your partiality was the effect of esteem, founded upon a general love of merit, and a principle of justice; and your heart, which fell the facrifice of your error, was totally

gone ere you expected it was in danger.

A thousand times have I been upon the point of showing you the perils of your situation; but the same inexperience which occasioned your mistake, I hoped, with the affistance of time and absence, would effect a cure: I was, indeed, most unwilling to destroy your illusion, while I dared hope it might itself contribute to the restoration of your tranquillity; since your ignorance of the danger, and force of your attachment, might possibly prevent that despondency with which young people, in similar circumstances are apt to persuade themselves, that what is only difficult, is absolutely impossible.

But now, fince you have again met, and are become more intimate than ever, all my hope from

filence and feeming ignorance is at an end.

Awake then, my dear, my deluded child, awake to the fense of your danger, and exert yourself to avoid the evils with which it threatens you;—evils which, to a mind like your's, are most to be dreaded; secret, repining, and concealed, yet consuming regret! Make a noble effort for the recovery of your peace, which now, with sorrow I see it, depends wholly upon the presence of Lord Orville. This effort may indeed be painful; but trust to my experience, when I assure you it is requisite.

You must quit him!—his fight is baneful to your repose, his society is death to your future tranquillity! Believe me, my beloved child, my heart aches for

your suffering, while it dictates its necessity.

Could I flatter myself that Lord Orville would, indeed, be sensible of your worth, and act with a nobleness of mind which should prove it congenial to his own, then would I leave my Evelina to the unmolested enjoyment of the cheerful society, and increasing regard, of a man she so greatly admires: but this is not an age in which we may trust to appearances; and imprudence is much sooner regretted than repaired. Your health, you tell me, is much mended:

—Can you then consent to leave Bristol?—not abruptly, that I do not desire, but in a few days from the time you receive this? I will write to Mrs. Selwyn, and tell her how much I wish your return; and Mrs. Clinton can take sufficient care of you.

I have meditated upon every possible expedient that might tend to your happiness, ere I fixed upon exacting from you a compliance which I am convinced will be most painful to you;—but I can satisfy myself in none. This will at least be safe; and

as to fuccess,-we must leave it to time.

I am very glad to hear of Mr. Macartney's welfare. Adieu, my dearest child! Heaven preserve and strengthen you!

A. V.

### LETTER XXIII.

EVELINA to the Rev. Mr. VILLARS.

Clifton, Sept. 28.

Sweetly, most sweetly, have two days more passed since I wrote; but I have been too

much engaged to be exact in my journal.

To-day has been less tranquil. It was destined for the decision of the important bet, and has been productive of general confusion throughout the house. It was settled that the race should be run at five o'clock in the asternoon. Lord Merton breakfasted here, and staid till noon. He wanted to engage the ladies to bet on his side, in the true spirit of

gaming, without feeing the racers. But he could only prevail on Lady Louifa, as Mrs. Selwyn faid she never laid a wager against her own wishes, and Mrs. Beaumont would not take fides. As for me, I was not applied to. It is impossible for negligence to be more pointed, than that of Lord Merton to me, in the presence of Lady Louisa.

But, just before dinner, I happened to be alone in the drawing-room, when his Lordship suddenly returned; and coming in with his usual familiarity, he was beginning, "You fee, Lady Louisa,-" but stopping short, " Pray, where's every body gone?"

"Indeed I don't know, my Lord."

He then shut the door; and, with a great alteration in his face and manner, advanced eagerly towards me, and faid, "How glad I am, my sweet girl, to meet you, at last, alone! By my foul, I began to think there was a plot against me, for I've never been able to have you a minute to myfelf." And very freely he feized my hand.

I was so much surprised at this address, after having been fo long totally neglected, that I could make no other answer, than staring at him with un-

feigned astonishment.

"Why now," continued he, "if you was not the cruellest little angel in the world, you would have helped me to fome expedient : for you fee how I am watched here; Lady Louisa's eyes are never off me. She gives me a charming foretaste of the pleasures of a wife! however, it won't last long."

Disgusted to the greatest degree, I attempted to draw away my hand; but I believe I should not have fucceeded, if Mrs. Beaumont had not made her appearance. He turned from me with the greatest assurance, and said, "How are you, Ma'am? -how is Lady Louisa?-you see I can't live a moment out of the house."

Could you, my dearest Sir, have believed it pos-

fible for fuch effrontery to be in man?

Before dinner came Mr. Coverley, and, before five o'clock, Mr. Lovel and fome other company.

The place marked out for the race, was a gravel-walk in Mrs. Beaumont's garden, and the length of the ground twenty yards. When we were fummoned to the course, the two poor old women made their appearance. Though they seemed very healthy for their time of life, they yet looked so weak, so institute in the fight. However, this was not the general sense of the company; for they no soner came forward, than they were greeted with a laugh from every beholder, Lord Orville excepted, who looked very grave during the whole transaction. Doubtless he must be greatly discontented at the dissipated conduct and extravagance of a man with whom he is, soon, to be so nearly connected.

For some time, the scene was truly ridiculous: the agitation of the parties concerned, and the bets that were laid upon the old women, were absurd beyond measure. Who are you for? and whose side are you of? was echoed from mouth to mouth by the whole company. Lord Merton and Mr. Coverley were both so excessively gay and noisy, that I soon found they had been too free in drinking to their success. They handed, with loud shouts, the old women to the race-ground, and encouraged them by liberal

promifes to exert themselves.

When the fignal was given for them to fet off, the poor creatures, feeble and frightened, ran against each other; and, neither of them able to support the shock, they both fell on the ground.

Lord Merton and Mr. Coverley flew to their affiftance. Seats were brought for them; and they each drank a glass of wine. They complained of being much bruised; for, heavy and helpless, they had not been able to save themselves, but fell with their whole weight upon the gravel. However, as they seemed equal sufferers, both parties were too eager to have the affair deferred.

Again therefore they fet off, and hobbled along, nearly



watched

mearly even with each other for some time; yet frequently, and to the inexpressible diversion of the company; they stumbled and tottered; and the confused hallowing of " Now, Coverley!" " Now, Merton!" rung from fide to fide during the whole affair.

Not long after, a foot of one of the poor women flipt, and with great force the came again to the ground. Involuntarily, I sprung forward to affist her; but Lord Merton, to whom she did not belong, stopped me, calling out, " No foul play! no foul play!"

Mr. Coverley then, repeating the fame words, went himself to help her, and insisted that the other should stop. A debate ensued; but the poor creature was too much hurt to move, and declared her utter inability to make another attempt. Mr. Coverley was quite brutal: he fwore at her with unmanly rage, and feemed scarce able to refrain even from striking her.

Lord Merton then, in great rapture, faid it was a hallow thing; but Mr. Coverley contended, that the fall was accidental, and time should be allowed for the woman to recover. However, all the company being against him, he was pronounced the loser.

We then went to the drawing-room, to tea. After which, the evening being remarkably warm, we all walked in the garden. Lord Merton was quite riotous, and Lady Louisa in high spirits; but Mr. Coverley endeavourd, in vain, to conceal his chagrin.

As Lord Orville was thoughtful, and walked by himfelf, I expected that, as usual, I should pass unnoticed, and be left to my own meditations: but this was not the case; for Lord Merton, entirely off his guard, giddy equally from wine and success, was very troublesome to me; and, regardless of the presence of Lady Louisa, which hitherto has restrained him even from common civility, he attached himself to me, during the walk, with a freedom of gallantry that put me. extremely out of countenance. He paid me the most high-flown compliments; and frequently and forcibly feized my hand, though I repeatedly, and with undifsembled anger, drew it back. Lord Orville, I faw, VOL. II.

watched us with earnestness; and Lady Louisa's smiles were converted into looks of disdain.

I could not bear to be thus fituated; and complained I was tired, I quickened my pace, with intention to return to the house; but Lord Merton, hastily following, caught my hand, and saying the day was his own, vowed he would not let me go.

"You must, my Lord," cried I, extremely flurried.
"You are the most charming girl in the world,"
faidhe, "and never looked better than at this moment."

"My Lord," cried Mrs. Selwyn, advancing to us, "you don't confider, that the better Miss Anville looks, the more striking is the contrast with your Lordship; therefore, for your own sake, I would advise you not to hold her."

" Egad, my Lord," cried Mr. Coverley, "I don't fee what right you have to the best old, and the best young woman too, in the same day."

"Best young woman!" repeated Mr. Lovel; "pon honour, Jack, you have made a most unfortunate speech; however, if Lady Louisa can pardon you,—and her Ladyship is all goodness,—I am sure nobody else can; for you have committed an outrageous solecism in good manners."

"And pray, Sir," faid Mrs. Selwyn, "under what denomination may your own speech pass?"

Mr. Lovel, turning another way, affected not to hear her: and Mr. Coverley, bowing to Lady Louisa, said, "Her Ladyship is well acquainted with my devotion;—but, egad, I don't know how it is,—I had always an unlucky turn at an epigram, and never could resist a smart play upon words in my life."

" Pray, my Lord," cried I, " let go my hand!

pray, Mrs. Selwyn, fpeak for me."

"My Lord," faid Mrs. Selwyn, "in detaining Miss Anville any longer, you only lose time; for we are already as well convinced of your valour and your strength, as if you were to hold her an age."

" My Lord," faid Mrs. Beaumont, " I must beg

leave to interfere: I know not if Lady Louisa can pardon you; but as this young Lady is at my house, I do not choose to have her made uneasy."

" I pardon him !" cried Lady Louisa; "I de-

clare I am monstrous glad to get rid of him."
"Egad, my Lord," cried Mr. Coverley, "while you are grafping at a shadow, you'll lose a substance:

you'd best make your peace while you can."

" Pray, Mr. Coverley, be quiet," faid Lady Louisa, peevishly; " for I declare I won't speak to him. Brother," taking hold of Lord Orville's arm, " will you walk in with me?"

"Would to Heaven," cried I, frightened to fee how much Lord Merton was in liquor, " that I too had a brother !- and then I should not be ex-

posed to fuch treatment!"

Lord Orville, instantly quitting Lady Louisa, said, "Will Miss Anville allow me the honour of taking that title?" and then, without waiting for any answer, he disengaged me from Lord Merton; and, handing me to Lady Louisa, "Let me," added he, "take equal care of both my fifters;" and then, defiring her to take hold of one arm, and begging me to make use of the other, we reached the house in a moment. Lord Merton, disordered as he was, attempted not stop us.

As foon as we entered the house, I withdrew my arm, and courtefy'd my thanks, for my heart was too full for speech. Lady Louisa, evidently hurtat her brother's condescension, and piqued extremely by Lord Merton's behaviour, filently drew away her's; and, biting her lips, with a look of infinite vexation,

walked fullenly up the hall.

Lord Orville asked her if she would not go into

the parlour?

"No," answered she haughtily; "I leave you and your new fister together:" and then she walked up stairs.

I was quite confounded at the pride and rudeness of this speech. Lord Orville himself seemed H 2 thunderthunderstruck: I turned from him, and went into the parlour: he followed me, saying, "Must I now apologize, to Miss Anville for the liberty of my interference?—or ought I to apologize that I did not, as I wished, interfere sooner?"

"O, my Lord," cried I, with an emotion I could not repress, "it is from you alone I meet with any respect;—all others treat me with im-

pertinence, or contempt !"

I am forry I had not more command of myself, as he had reason just then to suppose I particularly meant his sister; which, I am sure, must very much hurt him.

"Good Heaven," cried he, "that fo much sweetness and merit can fail to excite the love and admiration so justly their due! I cannot,—I dare not express to you half the indignation I feel at this moment!"

"I am forry, my Lord," faid I, more calmly, to have raised it; but yet,—in a situation that calls for protection, to meet only with mortifications,—indeed I am but ill formed to bear them!"

"My dear Miss Anville," cried he warmly, "allow me to be your friend; think of me as if I were indeed your brother; and let me intreat you to accept my best services, if there is any thing in which I can be so happy as to shew my regard,—my respect for you!"

Before I had time to speak, the rest of the party entered the parlour; and, as I did not wish to see any thing more of Lord Merton, at least before he hadslept, I determined to leave it. Lord Orville, seeing my design, said, as I passed him, "Will you go?" "Had not I best, my Lord?" said I. "I am afraid," said he, smiling, "since I must now speak as your brother, I am afraid you had;—you see you may trust me, since I can advise against my own interest."

I then left the room, and have been writing ever fince. And, methinks, I can never lament the rudeness of Lord Merton, as it has more than ever confirmed to me the esteem of Lord Orville.

## [ 149 ] LETTER XXIV.

EVELINA in Continuation.

Sept. 30,

OH, Sir, what a strange incident have I to

recite! what a field of conjecture to open!

Yesterday evening we all went to an affembly. Lord Orville presented tickets to the whole family; and did me the honour, to the no fmall furprise of all here, I believe, to dance with me. But every day abounds in fresh instances of his condescending politeness; and he now takes every opportunity of

calling me his friend, and his fifter.

Lord Merton offered a ticket to Lady Louisa; but fhe was fo much incenfed against him, that she refufed it with the utmost disdain : neither could he prevail upon herto dance with him; she fat still the whole evening, and deigned not to look at or speak to him. To me her behaviour is almost the same; for she is cold, distant, and haughty, and her eyes express the greatest contempt. But for Lord Orville, how miferable would my residence here make me!

We were joined in the ball-room by Mr. Coverley, Mr. Lovel, and Lord Merton, who looked as if he was doing penance, and fat all the evening next to Lady Louisa, vainly endeavouring to appeale her

anger.

Lord Orville began the minuets: he danced with a young lady who feemed to engage the general attention, as she had not been seen here before. She is pretty, and looks mild and good-humoured.

"Pray, Mr. Lovel," faid Lady Louifa, " who is

that?"

" Miss Belmont," answered he, the young heiress; she came to the Wells yesterday."

Struck with the name, I involuntarily repeated

it; but nobody heard me.

"What is her family?" faid Mrs. Beaumont.

" Have you not heard of her, Ma'am?" cried he; " fhe is only daughter and heirefs of Sir John Belmont."

Good

Good Heaven, how did I start! the name struck my ear like a thunderbolt. Mrs. Selwyn, who immediately looked at me, faid, "Be calm, my dear, and we will learn the truth of all this."

Till then I had never imagined her to be acquainted with my story; but she has since told me, that she knew my unhappy mother, and was well in-

formed of the whole affair.

She asked Mr. Lovel a multitude of questions; and I gathered from his answers, that this young lady was just come from abroad with Sir John Belmont, who was now in London; that she was under the care of his sister, Mrs. Paterson; and that she would inherit a considerable estate.

I cannot express the strange feelings with which I was agitated during this recital. What, my dearest Sir, can it possibly mean? Did you ever hear of any after-marriage?—or must I suppose, that, while the lawful child is rejected, another is adopted?—I know not what to think! I am bewildered with a

contrariety of ideas!

Whenwe came home, Mrs. Selwyn passed more than an hour in my room, conversing upon this subject. She says, that I ought instantly to go to town, find out my father, and have the affair cleared up. She affures me I have too strong a resemblance to my dear, though unknown, mother, to allow of the least hesitation in my being owned, when once I am seen. For my part, I have no wish but to act by your direction.

I cannot give any account of the evening; so difturbed, so occupied am I by this subject, that I can think of no other. I have intreated Mrs. Selwyn to ob serve the strictest secrecy, and she has promised that she will. Indeed, she has too much sense to

be idly communicative.

Lord Orville took notice of my being absent and filent; but I ventured not to intrust him with the cause. Fortunately, he was not of the party at the time Mr. Lovel made the discovery.

Mrs.

Mrs. Selwyn fays, that if you approve my going to town, the vill herfelf accompany me. I had a thoufand times rather ask the protection of Mrs. Mirvan; but, after this offer, that will not be possible.

Adieu, my dearest Sir. I am sure you will write immediately, and shall be all impatience till your

letter arrives.

### LETTER XXV.

EVELINA in Continuation.

Good God, my dear Sir, what a wonderful tale have I again to relate! even yet, I am not re-

covered from my extreme furprise.

Yesterday morning, as soon as I had finished my hasty letter, I was summoned to attend a walking party to the Hot-wells. It confifted only of Mrs. Selwyn and Lord Orville. The latter walked by my fide all the way; and his conversation distipated my uneafiness, and infensibly restored my serenit.

At the pump-room I faw Mr. Macartney; I courtefy'd to him twice ere he would speak to me. When he did, I began to apologize for having disappointed him; but I did not find it very eafy to excuse myself, as Lord Orville's eyes, with an expresfion of anxiety that diffressed me, turned from him to me, and me to him, every word I spoke. Convinced, however, that I had really trifled with Mr Macartney, I scrupled not to beg his pardon. He was then not merely appealed, but even grateful.

He requested me to see him to-morrow: but I had not the folly to be again guilty of an indifcretion which had already caused me so much uneasiness; and therefore I told him frankly, that it was not in my power at prefent to fee him but by accident; and, to prevent his being offended, I hinted to him the reason I could not receive him as I wished

to do.

When I had fatisfied both him and myfelf upon this fubject, I turned to Lord Orville, and faw, with concern, the gravity of his countenance. I would have spoken to him, but knew not how: I believe, however, he read my thoughts; for, in a little time, with a fort of serious smile, he said, "Does not Mr. Macartney complain of his disappointment?"

" Not much, my Lord."

"And how have you appealed him?" Finding I hesitated what to answer, "Am I not your brother?" continued he, "and must I not inquire into your affairs?"

"Certainly, my Lord," faid I, laughing, "I only wish it were better worth your Lordship's while."

"Let me, then, make immediate use of my privilege. When shall you see Mr. Macartney again?"

"Indeed, my Lord, I can't tell."

"But,—do you know that I shall not suffer my sifter to make a private appointment?"

"Pray, my Lord," cried I earnestly, "use that word no more! Indeed you shock me extremely."

"That would Inot do for the world," cried he, "yet you know not how warmly, how deeply I am interefled, not only in all your concerns, but in all your actions."

This fpeech—the most particular one Lord Orville had ever made to me, ended our conversation at that time; for I was too much struck by it to

make any answer,

Soon after, Mr. Macartney, in a low voice, intreated me not to deny him the gratification of returning the money. While he was fpeaking, the young lady I faw yesterday at the assembly, with the large party, entered the pump-room. Mr. Macartney turned as pale as death, his voice faultered, and he seemed not to know what he said. I was myself almost equally disturbed, by the crowd of confused ideas that occurred to me. Good Heaven! thought I, why should he be thus agitated?—is it possible this can be the young lady he loved?—

In a few minutes we quitted the pump-room; and though I twice wished Mr. Macartney good morning, he was so absent he did not hear me.

We did not immediately return to Clifton, as Mrs. Selwyn had business at a pamphlet-shop. While she was looking at some new poems, Lord Orville again asked me when I should see Mr. Macartney?

"Indeed, my Lord," cried I, "I know not, but I would give the universe for a few moments conversation with him!" I spoke this with a simple sincerity, and was not aware of the force of my own words.

"The universe!" repeated he, "Good God, Miss.

Anville, do you fay this to me?"

"I would fay it," returned I, " to any body, my Lord."

"I beg your pardon," faid he, in a voice that

showed him ill pleased, "I am answered!"

"My Lord," cried I, "you must not judge hardly of me. I spoke inadvertently; but if you knew the painful suspense I suffer at this moment, you would not be surprised at what I have said."

" And would a meeting with Mr. Macartney re-

lieve you from that suspense?"

"Yes, my Lord, two words might be sufficient."
"Would to Heaven," cried he, after a short pause,

44 that I were worthy to know their import!"

"Worthy, my Lord!—O, if that were all, your Lordship could ask nothing I should not be ready to answer! If I were but at liberty to speak, I should be proud of your Lordship's inquiries: but, indeed, I am not—I have not any right to communicate the affairs of Mr. Macartney;—your Lordship cannot suppose I have."

"I will own to you," answered he, "I know not what to suppose; yet there seems a frankness even in your mystery—and such an air of openness in your countenance, that I am willing to hope—"He stopped a moment, and then added, "This

meeting, you fay, is essential to your repose?"

"I did not fay that, my Lord; but yet I have the most important reasons for wishing to speak to him."

He paused a few minutes; and then said with warmth, "Yes, you shall speak to him!—I will mysfelf assist you!—Miss Anville, I am sure, cannot form a wish against propriety: I will ask no questions, I will rely upon her own purity, and, uninformed, blindfold as I am, I will serve her with all my power!" And then he went into the shop, leaving me so strangely affected by his generous behaviour, that I almost wished to follow him with my thanks.

When Mrs. Selwyn had transacted her affairs, we

returned home.

The moment dinner was over, Lord Orville went out, and did not come back till just as we were summoned to supper. This is the longest time he has spent from the house since I have been at Cliston; and you cannot imagine, my dear Sir, how much I missed him. I scarce knew before how infinitely I am indebted to him alone for the happiness I have enjoyed since I have been at Mrs. Beaumont's.

As I generally go down stairs last, he came to me, the moment the ladies had passed by, and said, "Shall you be at home to-morrow morning?"

" I believe fo, my Lord."

"And will you then receive a visitor for me?"

" For you, my Lord!"

"Yes:—I have made acquaintance with Mr. Macartney, and he has promifed to call upon me to-morrow about three o'clock."

And then, taking my hand, he led me down stairs.

O Sir!—was there ever such another man as Lord
Orville?—Yes, one other now resides at Berry-Hill!

This morning there has been a great deal of company here; but at the time appointed by Lord Orville, doubtlefs with that confideration, the parlour is almost always empty, as every body is dreffing.

Mrs. Beaumont, however, was not gone up stairs

when Mr. Macartney fent in his name.

Lord

Lord Orville immediately faid, "Beg the favour of him to walk in. You fee, Madam, that I confider myfelf as at home."

"I hope fo," answered Mrs. Beaumont, " or I

fhould be very uneafy."

Mr. Macartney then entered. I believe we both felt very confcious to whom the visit was paid: but Lord Orville received him as his own guest; and not merely entertained him as such while Mrs. Beaumont remained in the room, but for some time after she had left it: a delicacy that saved me from the embarrassment I should have felt, had he immediately quitted us.

In a few minutes, however, he gave Mr. Macartney a book,—for I, too, by way of pretence for continuing in the room, pretended to be reading,—and begged he would be fo good as to look it over, while he answered a note, which he would dispatch in a

few minutes, and return to him.

When he was gone, we both parted with our books; and Mr. Macartney, again producing the paper with the money, befought me to accept it.

"Pray," faid I, still declining it, "did you know the young lady who came into the pump-room yesterday morning?"

"Know her!" repeated he, changing colour,

"Oh, but too well!"

lo "Indeed !" and good ! It's ym bovisoon vidin

Why, Madam, do you ask?"

"I must beseech you to satisfy me further upon

this subject; pray tell me who she is."

"Inviolably as I meant to keep my fecret, I can refuse you, Madam, nothing;—that lady—is the daughter of Sir John Belmont!—of my father!"

"Gracious Heaven!" cried I, involuntarily laying my hand on his arm, "you are then—my brother, I would have faid, but my voice failed me, and I burst into tears.

"Oh, Madam," cried he, "what does this

mean?—what can thus distress you?"

I could

I could not answer, but held out my hand to him. He seemed greatly surprised, and talked in high terms of my condescension.

"Spare yourfelf," cried I, wiping my eyes, "fpare yourfelf this mistake,—you have a right to all I can do for you; the similarity of our circumstances—"

We were then interrupted by the entrance of Mrs. Selwyn; and Mr. Macartney, finding no probability of our being left alone, was obliged to take leave, though, I believe, very reluctantly, while in fuch suspense.

Mrs. Selwyn, then, by dint of interrogatories, drew from me the state of this affair. She is so penetrating, that there is no possibility of evading to

give her satisfaction.

Is not this a strange event? Good Heaven! how little did I think that the visits I so unwillingly paid at Mr. Branghton's would have introduced me to so near a relation! I will never again regret the time I spent in town this summer: a circumstance so fortunate will always make me think of it with pleasure.

\* \* \* \* \*

I have just received your letter,—and it has almost broken my heart!—Oh, Sir! the illusion is over, indeed! how vainly have I flattered, how miserably deceived myself! Long since, doubtful of the situation of my heart, I dreaded a scrutiny;—but now, now that I have so long escaped, I began, indeed, to think my safety insured, to hope that my sears were causeless, and to believe that my good opinion and esteem of Lord Orville might be owned without suspicion, and selt without danger;—miserably deceived, indeed!

His fight is baneful to my repose,—his society is death to my future tranquillity! Oh, Lord Orville! could I have believed that a friendship so grateful to my heart, so soothing to my distresses, a friendship which, in every respect, did me so much ho-

nour, would only ferve to embitter all my future moments!—What a strange, what an unhappy circumstance, that my gratitude, though so justly excited should be seen as a second could be seen as a second

cited, should be so fatal to my peace!

Yes, Sir, I will quit him;—would to Heaven I could at this moment! without feeing him again,—without trusting to my now conscious emotion!—Oh, Lord Orville, how little do you know the evils I owe to you! how little, suppose that, when most dignified by your attention, I was most to be pitied,—and when most exalted by your notice, you were most my enemy!

You, Sir, relied upon my ignorance;—I, alas, upon your experience; and, whenever I doubted the weakness of my heart, the idea that you did not suspect it, reassured me,—restored my courage, and confirmed my error!—Yet am I most sensible

of the kindness of your silence.

Oh, Sir! why have I ever quitted you? why been

exposed to dangers to which I am fo unequal?

But I will leave this place, leave Lord Orville,—leave him, perhaps, for ever!—no matter; your counfel, your goodness, may teach me how to recover the peace and the serenity of which my unguarded folly has beguiled me. To you alone do I trust,—in you alone confide for every future hope I may form.

The more I consider the parting with Lord Orville, the less fortitude do I feel to bear the separation;—the friendship he has shown me,—his politeness,—his sweetness of manners,—his concern in my affairs,—his solicitude to oblige me,—all, all to be given up!—

No, I cannot tell him I am going,—I dare not trust myself to take leave of him,—I will run away without feeing him:—implicitly will I follow your advice,

avoid his fight, and shun his fociety!

To-morrow morning I will fet off for Berry Hill. Mrs. Selwyn and Mrs. Beaumont shall alone know my intention. And to-day—I will spend in my own room. The readiness of my obedience is the only atonement I can offer for the weakness which calls for its exertion.

Can you, will you, most honoured, most dear Sir! fole prop by which the poor Evelina is supported,—can you, without reproach, without displeasure, receive the child you have so carefully reared,—from whose education better fruit might have been expected, and who, blushing for her unworthiness, fears to meet the eye by which she has been cherished?—Oh yes, I am sure you will! Your Evelina's errors are those of the judgment; and you, I well know, pardon all but those of the heart.

# LETTER XXVI.

EVELINA in Continuation.

Clifton, October 1.

I, HAVE only time, my dearest Sir, for three words, to overtake my last letter, and prevent your expecting me immediately; for when I communicated my intention to Mrs. Selwyn, the would not hear of it, and declared it would be highly ridiculous for me to go before I received an answer to my intelligence concerning the journey from Paris. She has, therefore, infifted upon my waiting till your next letter arrives. I hope you will not be displeased at my compliance, though it is rather against my own judgment; but Mrs. Selwyn quite overpowered me with the force of her arguments. I will, however, see very little of Lord Orville; I will never come down stairs before breakfast; give up all my walks in the garden, - feat myfelf next to Mrs. Selwyn; and not merely avoid his conversation, but thun his presence. I will exert all the prudence and all the resolution in my power, to prevent this short delay from giving you any further uneafiness.

Adieu, my dearest Sir. I shall not now leave

Clifton till I have your directions.

#### LETTER XXVII.

EVELINA in Continuation.

one of the but the transact at the Wellsy and

Yesterday, from the time I received your kind, though heart-piercing letter, I kept my room,—for I was equally unable and unwilling to fee Lord Orville: but this morning, finding I feemed destined to pass a few days longer here, I endeavoured to calm my spirits, and to appear as usual; though I determined to avoid him to the utmost of my power. Indeed, as I entered the parlour, when called to breakfast, my thoughts were so much occupied with your letter, that I selt as much confusion at his sight, as if he had himself been informed of its contents.

Mrs. Beaumont made me a flight compliment upon my recovery, for I had pleaded illness to excuse keeping my room: Lady Louisa spake not a word: but Lord Orville, little imagining himself the cause of my indisposition, inquired concerning my health with the most distinguishing politeness. I hardly made any answer; and, for the first time since I have been here, contrived to sit at some distance from him.

I could not help observing that my referve surprised him; yet he persisted in his civilities, and seemed to wish to remove it. But I paid him very little attention; and the moment breakfast was over, instead of taking a book, or walking in the garden,

I retired to my own room.

Soon after, Mrs. Selwyn came to tell me, that Lord Orville had been proposing I should take an airing, and persuading her to let him drive us both in his phaeton. She delivered the message with an archness that made me blush; and added, that an airing, in my Lord Orville's carriage, could not fail to revive my spirits. There is no possibility of escaping her discernment; she has frequently rallied me upon his Lordship's attention,—and, alas!

-upon the pleasure with which I have received it !

However, I absolutely refused the offer.

"Well," faid she laughing, "I cannot just now indulge you with any solicitation; for, to tell you the truth, I have business to transact at the Wells, and am glad to be excused myself. I would ask you to walk with me;—but, since Lord Orville is resused, I have not the presumption to hope for success."

"Indeed," cried I, "you are mistaken; I will

attend you with pleasure."

"O rare coquetry!" cried she; furely it must be inherent in our fex, or it could not have been imbibed at Berry Hill."

I had not spirits to answer her, and therefore put

on my hat and cloak in filence.

"I prefume," continued she drily, " his Lord-

fhip may walk with us."

"If fo, Madam," faid I, " you will have a companion, and I will stay at home."

"My dear child," cried she, "did you bring the

certificate of your birth with you?"

" Dear Madam, no!"

Why then, we shall never be known again at

Berry Hill."

I felt too conscious to enjoy her pleasantry; but I believe she was determined to torment me, for she asked if she should inform Lord Orville that I desired him not to be of the party!"

"By no means, Madam; but, indeed, I had

rather not walk myfelf."

"My dear," cried she, "I really do not know you this morning,—you have certainly been taking.

a lesson of Lady Louisa."

She then went down stairs; but presently returning, told me she had acquainted Lord Orville that I did not choose to go out in the phaeton, but preserved a walk, têle-à-tête with her, by way of variety.

I faid nothing, but was really vexed. She bid me go down stairs, and said she would follow immediately.

Lord

Lord Orville met me in the hall. "I fear," faid he, "Miss Anville is not yet quite well?" and he would have taken my hand, but I turned from him, and courtesying slightly, went into the parlour.

Mrs. Beaumont and Lady Louisa were at work: Lord Merton was talking with the latter; for he has now made his peace, and is again received into savour.

I feated myself, as usual, by the window. Lord Orville, in a few minutes, came to me, and said, "Why is Miss Anville so grave?"

"Not grave, my Lord," faid I, "only stupid;"

and I took up a book.

"You will go," faid he, after a short pause, "to the affembly to-night?"

" No, my Lord, certainly not."

"Neither then will I; for I should be forry to fully the remembrance I have of the happiness I en-

joyed at the last."

Mrs. Selwyn then coming in, general inquiries were made to all but me, of who would go to the affembly? Lord Orville instantly declared he had letters to write at home; but every one else settled to go.

I then hastened Mrs. Selwyn away, though not before she had said to Lord Orville, "Pray, has your Lordship obtained Miss Anville's leave to fayour us with your company?"

"I have not, Madam," answered he, " had the

vanity to ask it."

During our walk, Mrs. Selwyn tormented me unmercifully. She told me, that fince I declined any addition to our party, I must, doubtless, be conscious of my own powers of entertainment; and begged me, therefore, to exert them freely. I repented a thoufand times having consented to walk alone with her: for though I made the most painful efforts to appear in spirits, her raillery quite overpowered me.

We went first to the pump-room. It was full of company; and the moment we entered, I heard a murmuring of, "That's she!" and, to my great

confusion,

confusion, I faw every eye turned towards me. I pulled my hat over my face, and, by the affistance of Mrs. Selwyn, endeavoured to screen myself from obfervation: nevertheles, I found I was so much the object of general attention, that I intreated her to hasten away. But unfortunately she had entered into conversation, very earnestly, with a gentleman of her acquaintance, and would not listen to me; but said, that if I was tired of waiting, I might walk on to the milliner's with the Miss Watkins, two young ladies I had seen at Mrs. Beaumont's, who were going thither.

I accepted the offer very readily, and away we went. But we had not gone three yards, before we were followed by a party of young men, who took every possible opportunity of looking at us; and as they walked behind, talked aloud, in a manner at once unintelligible and absurd! "Yes," cried one, "'tis certainly she!—mark but her blushing cheek!"

"And then her eye-her downcast eye!"-cried

"True, oh most true," said a third, "every beauty is her own!"

"But then," faid the first, "her mind,—now the difficulty is, to find out the truth of that, for she will not say a word."

"She is timid," answered another; "mark but her timid air."

During this conversation we walked on silent and quick: as we knew not to whom it was particularly addressed, we were all equally ashamed, and equally desirous to avoid such unaccountable observations.

Soon after we were caught in a shower of rain. We hurried on; and these gentlemen, following us, offered their services in the most pressing manner, begging us to make use of their arms; and while I almost ran, in order to avoid their impertinence, I was suddenly met by Sir Clement Willoughby!

We both started; "Good God!" he exclaimed, "Miss Anville!" and then, regarding my tormen-



tors with an air of displeasure, he earnestly inquired,

if any thing had alarmed me?

"No, no," cried I; for I found no difficulty now to disengage myself from these youths, who, probably, concluding from the commanding air of Sir Clement, that he had a right to protect me, quietly gave way to him, and entirely quitted us.

With his usual impetuosity, he then began a thoufand inquiries, accompanied with as many compliments; and he told me, that he arrived at Bristol but this morning, which he had entirely devoted to

endeavours to discover where I lodged.

"Did you know, then," faid I, " that I was at

Briftol?"

"Would to Heaven," cried he, "that I could remain in ignorance of your proceedings with the same contentment you do of mine! then should I not for ever journey upon the wings of Hope, to meet my own despair! You cannot even judge of the cruelty of my fate; for the ease and serenity of your mind incapacitates you from feeling for the agitation of mine!"

The ease and serenity of my mind! alas, how little

do I merit those words!

"But," added he, "had accident brought me hither, had I not known of your journey, the voice of fame would have proclaimed it to the instantly upon my arrival."

"The voice of fame!" repeated I.

"Yes, for your's was the first name I heard at the pump-room. But had I not heard your name, such a description could have painted no one else."

"Indeed," faid I, "I do not understand you." But just then arriving at the milliner's, our converfation ended; for Miss Watkins called me to look

at caps and ribbons.

Sir Clement, however, has the art of being alwas at home; he was very foon engaged, as bufily as ourselves, in looking at lace ruffles. Yet he took an opportunity of saying to me in a low voice, "How charmed am I to fee you look fo well! I was told you were ill ;-but I never faw you in bet-

ter health, -never more infinitely lovely !"

I turned away to examine the ribbons, and foon after Mrs. Selwyn made her appearance. I found that she was acquainted with Sir Clement, and her manner of speaking to him convinced me that he was a favourite with her.

When their mutual compliments were over, the turned to me, and faid, " Pray, Miss Anville, how

long can you live without nourishment?"

"Indeed, Ma'ain," faid I laughing, "I have

never tried."

"Because so long, and no longer," answered she, \*\* you may remain at Bristol."

Why, what is the matter, Ma'am?"

"The matter! - why, all the ladies are at open war with you, -the whole pump-room is in confusion; and you, innocent as you pretend to look, are the cause. However, if you take my advice, you will be very careful how you eat and drink during your stay."

I begged her to explain herfelf: and she then told me, that a copy of verses had been dropped in the pump-room, and read there aloud: "The beauties of the Wells," faid she, " are all mentioned, but you are the Venus to whom the prize is given."

"Is it then possible," cried Sir Clement, "that

you have not feen thefe verses?"

"I hardly know," answered I, "whether any

body has."

"I affure you," faid Mrs. Selwyn, " if you give me the invention of them, you do me an honour I by no means deferve."

" I wrote down in my tablets," faid Sir Clement, " the stanzas which concern Miss Anville, this morning at the pump-room; and I will do myfelf the honour, of copying them for her this evening."

"But why the part that concerns Miss Anville?" faid Mrs. Selwyn; "Did you ever see her before

this morning?"

"O yes," answered he, "I have had that happiness frequently at Captain Mirvan's. Too, too
frequently!" added he, in a low voice, as Mrs. Selwyn turned to the milliner: and as soon as she was
occupied in examining some trimmings, he came to
me, and, almost whether I would or not, entered
into conversation with me.

"I have a thousand things," cried he, " to say to

you. Pray, where are you?"

"With Mrs. Selwyn, Sir."

"Indeed!—then, for once, Chance is my friend.

And how long have you been here?"

" About three weeks."

"Good Heaven! what an anxious fearch have I had, to discover your abode, since you so suddenly left town! The termagant Madame Duval resused me all intelligence. Oh, Miss Anville, did you know what I have endured! the sleepless, restless state of suspence I have been tortured with, you could not, all cruel as you are, you could not have received me with such frigid indifference!"

" Received you, Sir!"

"Why, is not my visit to yeu? Do you think I should have made this journey, but for the happiness of again seeing you?"

"Indeed it is possible I might, -fince so many

others do."

"Cruel, cruel girl! you know that I adore you! you know you are the mistress of my soul, and ar-

bitress of my fate!"

Mrs. Selwyn then advancing to us, he affumed a more difengaged air, and asked, if he should not have the pleasure of seeing her in the evening at the affembly?

"Oh, yes," cried she, "we shall certainly be there; so you may bring the verses with you, if

Miss Anville can wait for them so long."

"I hope then," returned he, "that you will do me the the honour to dance with me?"

I thanked

I thanked him, but faid I should not be at the affembly.

"Not be at the affembly!" cried Mrs. Selwyn,

"Why, have you too letters to write?"

She looked at me with a fignificant archness that made me colour; and I hastily answered, "No, indeed, Ma'am!"

"You have not!" cried she, yet more drily; then pray, my dear, do you stay at home to help,

-or to hinder others?".

"To do neither, Ma'am," answered I, in much confusion; "so, if you please, I will not stay at home."

"You allow me, then," faid Sir Clement, "to

hope for the honour of your hand?"

I only bowed,—for the dread of Mrs. Selwyn's

raillery made me not dare refuse him.

Soon after this we walked home; Sir Clement accompanied us; and the conversation that passed between Mrs. Selwyn and him was supported in so lively a manner, that I should have been much entertained, had my mind been more at ease: but, alas! I could think of nothing but the capricious, the unmeaning appearance which the alteration in my conduct must make in the eyes of Lord Orville! And much as I wish to avoid him, greatly as I desire to save myself from having my weakness known to him,—yet I cannot endure to incur his ill opinion,—and, unacquainted as he is with the reasons by which I am actuated, how can he fail contemning a change to him so unaccountable?

As we entered the garden, he was the first object we faw. He advanced to meet us; and I could not help observing, that at fight of each other both he

and Sir Clement changed colour.

We went into the parlour, where we found the fame party we had left. Mrs. Selwyn presented Sir Clement to Mrs. Beaumont; Lady Louisa and Lord Merton he seemed well acquainted with already.

The conversation was upon the general subjects, of the weather, the company at the Wells, and the

news

news of the day. But Sir Clement, drawing his chair next to mine, took every opportunity of ad-

drefling himfelf to me in particular.

I could not but remark the striking difference of bis attention, and that of Lord Orville: the latter has such gentleness of manners, such delicacy of conduct, and an air so respectful, that, when he flatters most, he never distresses; and when he most confers honour, appears to receive it! The former obtrudes his attention, and forces mine; it is so pointed, that it always consuses me, and so public, that it attracts general notice. Indeed I have sometimes thought that he would rather wish, than dislike, to have his partiality for me known, as he takes great care to prevent my being spoken to by any body but himself.

When at length he went away, Lord Orville took his feat, and faid with a half-smile, "Shall I call Sir Clement,—or will you call me an usurper for taking this place?—You make me no answer?

-Must I then suppose that Sir Clement-"

"It is little worth your Lordship's while," faid I, "to suppose any thing upon so insignificant an occasion."

"Pardon me," cried he ;-" to me nothing is

infignificant in which you are concerned."

To this I made no answer; neither did he say any thing more, till the ladies retired to dress; and then, when I would have followed them, he stopped me,

faying, "One moment, I entreat you."

I turned back, and he went on. "I greatly fear that I have been so unfortunate as to offend you; yet so repugnant to my very soul is the idea, that I know not how to suppose it possible I can unwittingly have done the thing in the world that, designedly, I would most wish to avoid."

"No, indeed, my Lord, you have not," faid I.
"You figh!" cried he, taking my hand, "would to Heaven I were the sharer of your uneafiness, whencesoever it springs! with what earnestness would

would I not struggle to alleviate it!—Tell me, my dear Miss Anville,—my new-adopted sister, my sweet and most amiable friend!—tell me, I beseech you, if I can afford you any assistance?"

"None, none, my Lord!" cried I, withdrawing

my hand, and moving towards the door.

" Is it then impossible I can serve you?-Perhaps

you wish to see Mr. Macartney again?"

"No, my Lord." And I held the door open.
"I am not, I own, forry for that. Yet, oh!
Miss Anville, there is a question,—there is a conjecture,—I know not how to mention, because I dread the result!—But I see you are in haste;—perhaps in the evening I may have the honour of a longer conversation.—Yet one thing will you have the goodness to allow me to ask?—Did you, this morning, when you went to the Wells,—did you know who you should meet there?"

" Who, my Lord?"

"I beg your pardon a thousand times for a curiofity fo unlicensed;—but I will say no more at present."

He bowed, expecting me to go;—and then, with quick steps, but a heavy heart, I came to my own room. His question, I am sure, meant Sir Clement Willoughby; and had I not imposed upon myself the severe task of avoiding slying Lord Orville with all my power, I would instantly have satisfied him of my ignorance of Sir Clement's journey. And yet more did I long to say something of the assembly, since I sound he depended upon my spending the evening at home.

I did not go down stairs again till the family was assembled to dinner. My dress, I saw, struck Lord Orville with assonishment; and I was myself so much assamed of appearing whimsical and un-

Ready, that I could not look up.

"I understood," said Mrs. Beaumont, "that

Miss Anville did not go out this evening?"

"Her intention in the morning," faid Mrs. Selwyn, "was to stay at home; but there is a fascinating power in an affembly, which, upon second thoughts, is not to be relifted."

"The affembly!" cried Lord Orville; " are

you then going to the affembly?"

I made no answer; and we all took our places at table.

It was not without difficulty that I contrived to give up my usual feat; but I was determined to adhere to the promise in my yesterday's letter, though I faw that Lord Orville feemed quite confounded at my visible endeavours to avoid him.

After dinner we all went into the drawing-room together, as there were no gentlemen to detain his Lordship; and then, before I could place myself out of his way, he faid, "You are then really going to the affembly?-May I ask if you shall dance?"

" I believe not, -my Lord."

"If I did not fear," continued he, " that you would be tired of the fame partner at two following affemblies, I would give up my letter-writing till to-morrow, and folicit the honour of your hand."

" If I do dance," faid I, in great confusion, " I

believe I am engaged."
"Engaged!" cried he, with earnestness, "May I ask to whom?"

" To-Sir Clement Willoughby, my Lord."

He faid nothing; but looked very little pleased, and did not address himself to me any more all the afternoon. Oh, Sir!-thus fituated, how comfortless were the feelings of your Evelina!

Early in the evening, with his accustomed affiduity, Sir Clement came to conduct us to the affembly. He foon contrived to feat himfelf next me, and, in a low voice, paid me fo many compliments,

that I knew not which way to look.

Lord Orville hardly spoke a word, and his countenance was grave and thoughtful; yet, whenever I raifed my eyes, his, I perceived, were directed towards me, though instantly, upon meeting mine, he looked another way.

In a short time, Sir Clement, taking from his pocket a folded paper, said, almost in a whisper, "Here, soveliest of women, you will see a faint, an unsuccessful attempt to paint the object of all my adoration! Yet, weak as are the lines for the purpose, I envy beyond expression the happy mortal who has dared make the effort."

"I will look at them," faid I, "fome other time:" for, confcious that I was observed by Lord Orville, I could not bear he should see me take a written paper, so privately offered, from Sir Clement. But Sir Clement is an impracticable man; and I never yet succeeded in any attempt to frustrate whatever he had planned."

"No," faid he, still in a whisper, "you must take them now, while Lady Louisa is away;" for she and Mrs. Selwyn were gone up stairs to finish their dress, "as she must by no means see them."

"Indeed," faid I, "I have no intention to show them."

"But the only way," answered he, "to avoid fuspicion, is to take them in her absence. I would have read them aloud myself, but that they are not proper to be seen by any body in this house, your-felf and Mrs. Selwyn excepted."

Then again he prefented me the paper; which I now was obliged to take, as I found declining it was vain. But I was forry that this action should be seen, and the whispering remarked, though the purport of the conversation was left to conjecture.

As I held it in my hand, Sir Clement teazed me to look at it immediately; and told me, that the reafon he could not produce the lines publicly, was, that among the ladies who were mentioned, and supposed to be rejected, was Lady Louisa Larpent. I am much concerned at this circumstance, as I cannot doubt but that it will render me more disagreeable to her than ever, if she should hear of it.

I will now copy the verses, which Sir Clement would not let me rest till I had read.

See last advance, with bashful grace, Downcast eye, and blushing cheek, Timid air, and beauteous face, Anville, -whom the Graces feek.

Tho' ev'ry beauty is her own, And though her mind each virtue fills, Anville, to her pow'r unknown, Artless firikes, -unconscious kills!

I am fure, my dear Sir, you will not wonder that a panegyric fuch as this should, in reading, give me the greatest confusion; and unfortunately, before I had finished it, the ladies returned.

"What have you there, my dear?" faid Mrs.

Selwyn.

"Nothing, Ma'am," faid I, haftily folding and putting it in my pocket.

has nothing," cried she, " the power of

rouge ?"

I made no answer: a deep figh, which escaped Lord Orville at that moment, reached my ears, and gave me fensations-which I dare not mention.

Lord Merton then handed Lady Louisa and Mrs. Beaumont to the latter's carriage. Mrs. Selwyn led the way to Sir Clement's, who handed me in after her.

During the ride, I did not once speak; but when I came to the affembly-room, Sir Clement took care that I should not preserve my silence. He asked me immediately to dance; I begged him to excuse me, and feek fome other partner. But, on the contrary, he told me he was very glad I would fit still, as he had a million of things to fay to me.

He then began to tell me how much he had fuffered from absence; how greatly he was alarmed when he heard I had left town, and how cruelly difficult he had found it to trace me; which, at last, he could only do by facrificing another week to Capt. Mirvan.

" And Howard Grove," continued he, " which, at my first visit, I thought the most delightful spot upon earth, now appeared to me the most dismal: the face of the country feemed altered: the walks which

I had thought most pleasant, were now most stupid? Lady Howard, who had appeared a cheerful and respectable old lady, now seemed in the common John Trot style of other aged dames: Mrs. Mirvan, whom I had esteemed as an amiable piece of still life, now became so insipid, that I could hardly keep awake in her company: the daughter too, whom I had regarded as a good-humoured pretty fort of girl, now seemed too insignificant for notice; and as to the Captain, I had always thought him a booby;—but now he appeared a savage!"

"Indeed, Sir Clement," cried I angrily, "I will

not hear you talk thus of my best friends.

"I beg your pardon," faid he; "but the contrast of my two visits was too striking not to be mentioned."

He then asked what I thought of the verses?

"Either," faid I, "that they are written ironi-

cally, or by fome madman."

Such a profusion of compliments ensued, that I was obliged to propose dancing in my own defence. When we stood up, "I intended," said he, "to have discovered the author by his looks; but I find you so much the general loadstone of attention, that my suspicions change their object every moment. Surely you must yourself have some knowledge who he is."

I told him, no. Yet, my dear Sir, I must own to you, I have no doubt but that Mr. Macartney must be the author: no one else would speak of me so partially; and, indeed, his poetical turn puts

it, with me, beyond dispute.

He asked me a thousand questions concerning Lord Orville; how long he had been at Bristol?—what time I had spent at Cliston?—whether he rode out every morning? whether I ever trusted myself in a phaeton? and a multitude of other inquiries; all tending to discover if I was honoured with much of his Lordship's attention, and all made with his usual freedom and impetuosity.

Fortunately,

Fortunately, as I much wished to retire early, Lady Louisa makes a point of being among the first who quit the rooms; and therefore we got home in

very tolerable time.

Lord Orville's reception of us was grave and cold: far from diffinguishing me, as usual, by particular civilities, Lady Louisa herself could not have seen me enter the room with more frigid unconcern, nor have more scrupulously avoided honouring me with any notice. But chiefly I was struck to see that he suffered Sir Clement, who staid supper, to sit between us, without any effort to prevent him, tho' till then he had seemed to be even tenacious of a seat next mine.

This little circumstance affected me more than I can express: yet I endeavoured to rejoice at it, since neglect and indifference from him may be my best friends.—But, alas!—so suddenly, so abruptly, to forfeit his attention!—to lose his friendship!—Oh, Sir, these thoughts pierced my soul!—scarce could I keep my seat; for not all my efforts could restrain the tears from trickling down my cheeks; however, as Lord Orville saw them not, for Sir Clement's head, was constantly between us, I tried to collect my spirits, and succeeded so far as to keep my place with decency, till Sir Clement took leave; and then, not daring to trust my eyes to meet those of Lord Orville, I retired.

I have been writing ever fince; for, certain that I could not fleep, I would not go to bed. Tell me, my dearest Sir, if you possibly can, tell me that you approve my change of conduct;—tell me that my altered behaviour to Lord Orville is right;—that my slying his fociety, and avoiding his civilities, are actions which you would have dictated.—Tell me this, and the facrifices I have made will comfort me in the midst of my regret;—for never, never can I cease to regret that I have lost the friendship of Lord Orville!—Oh, Sir!—I have slighted, have rejected,—have thrown it away!—No matter, it was an honour I merited not to preserve; and I now see,—that my mind was unequal to suffaining it without danger.

Yet so strong is the desire you have implanted in me to act with uprightness and propriety, that, however the weakness of my heart may distress and afflict me, it will never, I humbly trust, render me wilfully culpable. The wish of doing well governs every other, as far as concerns my conduct;—for am I not your child?—the creature of your own forming?—Yet, Oh Sir, friend, parent of my heart!—my feelings are all at war with my duties; and, while I most struggle to acquire self-approbation, my peace, my happiness, my hopes—are lost!

'Tis you alone can compose a mind so cruelly agitated: you, I well know, can feel pity for the weakness to which you are a stranger; and, tho' you blame the affliction, sooth and comfort the afflicted.

### LETTER XXVIII.

Mr. VILLARS to EVELINA.

Berry Hill, Oct. 3.

Your last communication, my dearest child, is indeed assonishing; that an acknowledged daughter and heiress of Sir John Belmont should be at Bristol, and still my Evelina bear the name of Anville, is to me inexplicable: yet the mystery of the letter to Lady Howard prepared me to expect something extraordinary upon Sir John Belmont's return to England.

Whoever this young lady may be, it is certain she now takes a place to which you have a right indisputable. An after-marriage I never heard of: yet, supposing such a one to have happened, Miss Evelyn was certainly the first wise; and therefore her daughter must, at least, be intitled to the name of Belmont.

Either there are circumstances in this affair at prefent utterly incomprehensible, or else some strange and most atrocious fraud has been practised; which of these two is the case, it now behoves us to inquire.

My

My reluctance to this step gives way to my conviction of its propriety, since the reputation of your dear and much-injured mother must now either be fully cleared from blemish, or receive its final and indelible wound.

The public appearance of a daughter of Sir John Behmont will revive the remembrance of Miss Evelyn's story in all who have heard it,—who the mother was, will be universally demanded;—and if any other Lady Belmont should be named,—the birth of my Evelina will receive a stigma, against which honour, truth, and innocence, may appeal in vain! A stigma which will eternally blast the fair same of her virtuous mother, and cast upon her blameless self the odium of a title, which not all her purity can rescue from established shame and dishonour!

No, my dear child, no; I will not quietly suffer the ashes of your mother to be treated with ignominy! Her spotless character shall be justified to the world, her marriage shall be acknowledged, and her child shall bear the name to which she is lawfully intitled.

It is true, that Mrs. Mirvan would conduct this affair with more delicacy than Mrs. Selwyn; yet, perhaps, to fave time is, of all confiderations, the most important, fince the longer this mystery is suffered to continue, the more difficult may be rendered its explanation. The sooner, therefore, you can set out for town, the less formidable will be your task.

Let not your timidity, my dear love, depress your spirits: I shall, indeed, tremble for you at a meeting so singular and so affecting; yet there can be no doubt of the success of your application. I inclose a letter from your unhappy mother, written and referved purposely for this occasion: Mrs. Clinton, too, who attended her in her last illness, must accompany you to town.—But, without any other certificate of your birth, that which you carry in your countenance, as it could not be effected by artifice, so it cannot admit of a doubt.

And now, my Evelina, committed, at length,

to the care of her real parent, receive the fervent prayers, wishes, and bleffings, of him who so fondly

adopted you!

May'lt thou, oh child of my bosom! may'st thou, in this change of situation, experience no change of disposition! but receive with humility, and support with meekness, the elevation to which thou art rising! May thy manners, language, and deportment, all evince that modest equanimity, and cheerful gratitude, which not merely deserve, but dignify prosperity! May'st thou, to the last moments of an unblemished life, retain thy genuine simplicity, thy singleness of heart, thy guileless sincerity! and may'st thou, stranger to oftentation, and superior to insolence, with true greatness of soul, shine forth conspicuous only in beneficence!

ARTHUR VILLARS.

## LETTER XXIX.

[Inclosed in the preceding Letter.]

Lady BELMONT to Sir JOHN BELMONT.

In the firm hope that the moment of anguish which approaches will prove the period of my sufferings, once more I address myself to Sir John Belmont, in behalf of the child, who, if it survives its mother, will hereafter be the bearer of this letter.

Yet in what terms,—oh, most cruel of men!—can the lost Caroline address you, and not address you in vain? Oh, deaf to the voice of compassion—deaf to the sting of truth—deaf to every tie of honour—say, in what terms may the lost Caroline address you, and not address you in vain?

Shall I call you by the loved, the respected title of husband?—no, you disclaim it!—The sather of my infant?—no, you doom it to infamy!—The lo-

ver who rescued me from a forced marriage?—no, you have yourself betrayed me!—The friend from whom I hoped succour and protection?—no, you have consigned me to misery and destruction!

Oh, hardened against every plea of justice, remorse, or pity! how, and in what manner, may I hope to move thee? Is there one method I have left untried? remains there one resource unessayed? No! I have exhausted all the bitterness of reproach, and drained every sluice of compassion! Hopeless, and almost desperate, twenty times have I slung away my pen;—but the feelings of a mother, a mother agonizing for the sate of her child, again animating my courage, as often I have resumed it.

Perhaps, when I am no more, when the measure of my woe is completed, and the still, silent, unreproaching dust, has received my sad remains,—then, perhaps, when accusation is no longer to be feared, nor detraction to be dreaded, the voice of equity, and

the cry of nature, may be heard.

Listen, oh Belmont, to their dictates! reprobate not your child, though you have reprobated its mother. The evils that are past, perhaps, when too late, you may wish to recall; the young creature you have persecuted, perhaps, when too late, you may regret that you have destroyed;—you may think, with horror, of the deceptions you have practised; and the pangs of remorse may follow me to the tomb:—Oh, Belmont, all my resentment softens into pity at the thought! what will become of thee, good Heaven, when with the eye of penitence thou reviewest thy past conduct!

Hear, then, the solemn, the last address with which the unhappy Caroline will importune thee.

If, when the time of thy contrition arrives,—for arrive it must!—when the sense of thy treachery shall rob thee of almost every other; if then thy tortured heart shall sigh to expiate thy guilt—mark the conditions upon which I leave thee my forgiveness.

Thou know'ft I am thy wife!—clear, then, to the world the reputation thou hast fullied, and receive as thy lawful successor the child who will present thee this my dying request!

The worthieft, the most benevolent, the best of men, to whose consoling kindness I owe the little tranquillity I have been able to preserve, has plighted me his faith, that upon no other conditions he

will part with his helpless charge.

Should'st thou, in the features of this deserted innocent, trace the resemblance of the wretched Caroline—should its face bear the marks of its birth,
and revive in thy memory the image of its mother,
wilt thou not, Belmont, wilt thou not therefore renounce it?—Oh, babe of my fondest affection! for
whom already I experience all the tenderness of maternal pity!—look not like thy unfortunate mother,
lest the parent whom the hand of death may spare,
shall be snatched from thee by the more cruel means
of unnatural antipathy!

I can write no more. The small share of serenity I have painfully acquired, will not bear the spock of the dreadful ideas that crowd upon me.

Adieu, -for ever!

Yet oh!—shall I not, in this last farewel, which thou wilt not read till every stormy passion is extinct,—and the kind grave has embosomed all my forrows,—shall I not offer to the man, once so dear to me, a ray of consolation to those afflictions he has in reserve? Suffer me, then, to tell thee, that my pity far exceeds my indignation,—that I will pray for thee in my last moments, and that the recollection of the love I once bore thee, shall swallow up every other!

Once more, adieu!

CAROLINE BELMONT.

## LETTER XXX.

EVELINA to the Rev. Mr. VILLARS.

Clifton, Oct. 3.

THIS morning I faw from my window that Lord Orville was walking in the garden: but I would not go down stairs till breakfast was ready; and then he paid me his compliments almost as coldly as Lady Louifa paid her's.

I took my usual place, and Mrs. Beaumont, Lady Louisa, and Mrs. Selwyn, entered into their usual conversation .- Not so your Evelina: difregarded, filent, and melancholy, she fat like a cypher, who to nobody belonging, by nobody was noticed.

Ill brooking fuch a fituation, and unable to fupport the neglect of Lord Orville, the moment breakfast was over I left the room; and was going up stairs, when, very unpleasantly, I was stopped by Sir Clement Willoughby, who, flying into the hall,

prevented my proceeding...

He inquired very particularly after my health, and intreated me to return into the parlour. Unwillingly I confented, but thought any thing preferable to continuing alone with him; and he would neither leave me, nor suffer me to pass on: yet, in returning, I felt not a little ashamed of appearing thus to take the vifit of Sir Clement to myfelf; and indeed he endeavoured, by his manner of addressing me, to give it that air.

He stayed, I believe, an hour; nor would he, perhaps, even then have gone, had not Mrs. Beaumont broken up the party, by proposing an airing in her coach. Lady Louisa consented to accompany her : but Mrs. Selwyn, when applied to, faid, if my Lord, or Sir Clement will join us, I shall be happy to make one; -but really a trio of females

will be nervous to the last degree."

Sir Clement readily agreed to attend them; indeed,

deed, he makes it his evident study to court the favour of Mrs. Beaumont. Lord Orville excused himfelf from going out; and I retired to my own room. What he did with himself I know not, for I would not go down stairs till dinner was ready: his coldness, though my own change of behaviour has occasioned it, so cruelly depresses my spirits, that I know not how to support myself in his presence.

At dinner, I found Sir Clement again of the party. Indeed he manages every thing his own way; for Mrs. Beaumont, though by no means easy to

please, seems quite at his disposal.

The dinner, the afternoon, and the evening, were to me the most irksome imaginable: I was tormented by the assiduity of Sir Clement, who not only took, but made opportunities of speaking to me;—and I was hurt,—oh, how inexpressibly hurt!—that Lord Orville not only forbore, as hitherto, seeking, he even neglected, all occasions of talking with me!

I begin to think, my dear Sir, that the sudden alteration in my behaviour was ill-judged and improper; for, as I had received no offence, as the cause of the change was upon my account, not his, I should not have assumed, so abruptly, a reserve for which I dared assign no reason,—nor have shunned his presence so obviously, without considering the strange appearance of such a conduct.

Alas, my dearest Sir, that my reflections should always be too late to serve me! Dearly, indeed, do I purchase experience! and much I fear I shall suffer yet more severely, from the heedless indiscretion of my temper, ere I attain that prudence and consideration, which, by foreseeing distant consequences,

may rule and direct in present exigencies.

Oct. 4.

Yesterday morning every body rode out, except Mrs. Selwyn and myself; and we two sat for some time together in her room: but, as soon as I could, I quitted her, to saunter in the garden; for she di-

verts herself so unmercifully with rallying me, either upon my gravity, or concerning Lord Orville, that

I dread having any conversation with her.

Here, I believe, I fpent an hour by myself; when, hearing the garden-gate open, I went into an arbour at the end of a long walk, where, ruminating very unpleasantly upon my future prospects, I remained quietly seated but a few minutes, before I was interrupted by the appearance of Sir Clement Willoughby.

I started; and would have left the arbour; but he prevented me. Indeed I am almost certain he had heard in the house where I was, as it is not otherwise probable he would have strolled down the

garden alone.

"Stop, stop," cried he, "loveliest and most be-

loved of women, stop and hear me!"

Then making me keep my place, he fat down by me, and would have taken my hand; but I drew it back, and faid I could not flay.

"Can you, then," cried he, "refuse me even the smallest gratification, though, but yesterday, I almost suffered martyrdom for the pleasure of seeing you."

" Martyrdom! Sir Clement."

"Yes, beauteous insensible! martyrdom: for did I not compel myself to be immured in a carriage, the tedious length of a whole morning, with the three most fatiguing women in England."

"Upon my word, the Ladies are extremely oblig-

ed to you."

"O," returned he, "they have every one of them so copious a share of their own personal esteem, that they have no right to repine at the failure of it in the world; and, indeed, they will themselves be the last to discover it."

"How little," cried I, "are those Ladies aware

of fuch feverity from you!"

"They are guarded," answered he, " so happily and so fecurely, by their own conceit, that they are not aware of it from any body. Oh, Miss Anville, to be torn away from you, in order to be shut up

with

with them, -is there a human being, except your

cruel felf, could forbear to pity me?"

"I believe, Sir Clement, however hardly you may choose to judge of them, your situation, by the world in general, would rather have been envied than pitied."

"The world in general," answered he, "has the same opinion of them that I have myself: Mrs. Beaumont is every where laughed at, Lady Louisa.

ridiculed, and Mrs. Selwyn hated."

" Good God, Sir Clement, what cruel strength

of words do you use!"

"It is you, my angel, are to blame, fince your perfections have rendered their faults so glaring. It protest to you, during our whole ride, I thought the carriage drawn by snails. The absurd pride of Mrs. Beaumont, and the respect she exacts, are at once insufferable and stupisying; had I never before been in her company, I should have concluded that this had been her first airing from the herald's-office,—and wished her nothing worse than that it might also be the last. I assure you, that but for gaining the freedom of her house, I would sly her as I would plague, pestilence, and famine. Mrs. Selwyn, indeed, afforded some relief from this formality, but the unbounded licence of her tongue—"

" O, Sir Clement, do you object to that?"

"Yes, my fweet reproacher, in a woman I do; in a woman I think it intolerable. She has wit, I acknowledge, and more understanding than half her sex put together; but she keeps alive a perpetual expectation of satire, that spreads a general uneasiness among all who are in her presence; and she talks so much, that even the best things she says, weary the attention. As to the little Louisa, 'tis such a pretty piece of languor, that 'tis almost cruel to speak rationally about her, else I should say, she is a mere compound of affectation, impertinence, and airs."

"I am quite amazed," faid I, "that with fuch opinions,

opinions, you can behave to them all with fo much

attention and civility."

"Civility! my angel,—why, I could worship, could adore them, only to procure myself a moment of your conversation! Have you not seen me pay my court to the gross Captain Mirvan, and the virago Madame Duval? Were it possible that a creature so horrid could be formed, as to partake of the worst qualities of all these characters—a creature who should have the haughtiness of Mrs. Beaumont, the brutality of Captain Mirvan, the self-conceit of Mrs. Selwyn, the affection of Lady Louisa, and the vulgarity of Madame Duval,—even to such a monster as that, I would pay homage, and pour forth adulation, only to obtain one word, one look from my adored Miss Anville!"

"Sir Clement," faid I, "you are greatly miftaken if you suppose such duplicity of character recommends you to my good opinion. But I must take this opportunity of begging you never more to

talk to me in this strain."

"Oh, Miss Anville, your reproofs, your coldness, pierce me to the soul! look upon me with less rigour, and make me what you please;—you shall govern and direct all my actions,—you shall new-form, new-model me:—I will not have even a wish but of your suggestion; only deign to look

upon me with pity, if not with favour!"

"Suffer me, Sir," faid I, very gravely, "to make use of this occasion to put a final conclusion to such expressions. I intreat you never again to address me in a language so flighty, and so unwelcome. You have already given me great uneasiness; and I must frankly assure you, that if you do not desire to banish me from wherever you are, you will adopt a very different style and conduct in future."

I then rose, and was going; but he flung himself at my feet to prevent me, exclaiming, in a most passionate manner, "Good God! Miss Anville, what do you say?-is it, can it be possible, that so unmoved, that with fuch petrifying indifference, you can tear from me even the remotest hope!"

"I know not, Sir," faid I, endeavouring to difengage myfelf from him, " what hope you mean, but I am fure that I never intended to give you any."

"You distract me!" cried he, "I cannot endure fuch fcorn :- I befeech you to have fome moderation in your cruelty, lest you make me desperate: fay, then, that you pity me; -O fairest inexorable! loveliest tyrant !- fay, tell me, at least, that you pity me!"

Just then, who should come in fight, as if intending to pass by the arbour, but Lord Orville! Good Heaven, how did I start! and he, the moment he faw me, turned pale, and was hastily retiring; -but I called out, "Lord Orville!-Sir Clement, releafe

me, let go my hand!"

Sir Clement, in fome confusion, suddenly rose, but still grasped my hand. Lord Orville, who had turned back, was again walking away; but still struggling to disengage myself, I called out, " Prav. pray, my Lord, don't go!-Sir Clement, I infift upon your releafing me!"

Lord Orville then, hastily approaching us, faid, with great spirit, "Sir Clement, you cannot wish

to detain Miss Anville by force!"

" Neither, my Lord," cried Sir Clement, proudly, " do I request the honour of your Lordship's interference."

However, he let go my hand, and I immediately

ran into the house.

I was now frightened to death, lest Sir Clement's mortified pride should provoke him to affront Lord Orville: I therefore ran hastily to Mrs. Selwyn, and intreated her, in a manner hardly to be understood, to walk towards the arbour. She asked no questions, for the is quick as lightning in taking a hint, but instantly hastened into the garden.

Imagine, my dear Sir, how wretched I must be till

I saw her return! scarce could I restrain myself from running back: however, I checked my impatience, and waited, though in agonies, till she came.

And now, my dear Sir, I have a conversation to write, the most interesting to me that I ever heard. The comments and questions with which Mrs. Selwyn interrupted her account, I shall not mention; for they are such as you may very easily suppose.

Lord Orville and Sir Clement were both feated very quietly in the arbour: and Mrs. Selwyn, standing still, as foon as she was within a few yards of them, heard Sir Clement say, "Your question, my Lord, alarms me, and I can by no means answer it, unless you will allow me to propose another?"

" Undoubtedly, Sir."

"You ask me, my Lord, what are my intentions?—I should be very happy to be fatisfied as to your Lordship's."

"I have never, Sir, professed any."

Here they were both for a few moments filent; and then Sir Clement faid, "To what, my Lord, must I then impute your desire of knowing mine?"

"To an unaffected interest in Miss Anville's

welfare."

"Such an interest," faid Sir Clement, drily, is indeed very generous: but, except in a fa-

ther-a brother-or a lover,-"

"Sir Clement," interrupted his Lordship, "I know your inference: and I acknowledge I have not the right of inquiry which any of those three titles bestow; and yet I confess the warmest wishes to serve her, and to see her happy. Will you then excuse me if I take the liberty to repeat my question?"

"Yes, if your Lordship will excuse my repeating, that I think it rather an extraordinary one."

"It may be fo," faid Lord Orville; "but this young lady feems to be peculiarly fituated; fhe is very young, very inexperienced, yet appears to be left totally to her own direction. She does not, I

believe.

believe, fee the dangers to which she is exposed; and I will own to you, I feel a strong desire to point them out."

"I don't rightly understand your Lordship ;-but I think you cannot mean to prejudice her against me."

"Her fentiments of you, Sir, are as much unknown to me, as your intentions towards her. Perhaps, were I acquainted with either, my officiousness might be at an end: but I presume not to ask upon what terms-"

Here he stopped; and Sir Clement said, "You know, my Lord, I am not given to despair: I am by no means fuch a puppy as to tell you I am upon

fure ground; however, perseverance-"

"You are, then, determined to perfevere?"

" I am, my Lord."

" Pardon me then, Sir Clement, if I speak to your with freedom. This young lady, though she seems alone, and in some measure unprotected, is not entirely without friends: she has been extremely well educated, and accustomed to good company; she has a natural love of virtue, and a mind that might adorn any station, however exalted: Is such a young lady, Sir Clement, a proper object to trifle with?-for your principles, excuse me, Sir, are well known."

" As to that, my Lord, let Miss Anville look to herself; she has an excellent understanding, and

needs no counfellor."

"Her understanding is, indeed, excellent; but the is too young for fuspicion, and has an artleffness

of disposition that I never saw equalled."

"My Lord," cried Sir Clement, warmly, "your praises make me doubt your disinterestedness; and there exists not the man who I would so unwillingly have for a rival as yourfelf. But you must give me leave to fay, you have greatly deceived me in regard to this affair."

"How fo, Sir?" cried Lord Orville, with equal

warmth.

"You were pleafed, my Lord," answered Sir Clement, "upon our first conversation concerning this young lady, to speak of her on terms by no means suited to your present encomiums: you said she was a poor, weak, ignorant girl; and I had great reason to believe you had a most contemptuous opinion of her."

"It is very true," faid Lord Orville, "that I did not, at our first acquaintance, do justice to the merit of Miss Anville; but I knew not then how new she was to the world: at present, however, I am convinced, that whatever might appear strange in her behaviour, was simply the effect of inexperience, timidity, and a retired education; for I find her informed, sensible, and intelligent. She is not, indeed, like most modern young ladies, to be known in half an hour; her modest worth and fearful excellence require both time and encouragement to show themselves. She does not, beautiful as she is, seize the foul by surprise; but, with more dangerous fascination, she steals it almost imperceptibly."

"Enough, my Lord," cried Sir Clement, "your folicitude for her welfare is now fufficiently explained."

"My friendship and esteem," returned Lord Orville, "I do not wish to disguise; but assure yourfelf, Sir Clement, I should not have troubled you upon this subject, had Miss Anville and I ever converversed but as friends. However, since you do not choose to avow your intentions, we must drop the subject."

"My intentions," cried he, "I will frankly own, are hardly known to myfelf. I think Miss Anville the loveliest of her sex; and, were I a marrying man, she, of all the women I have seen, I would fix upon for a wife: but, I believe, that not even the philosophy of your Lordship would recommend to me a connection of that sort, with a girl of obscure birth, whose only dowry is her beauty, and who is evidently in a state of dependency."

"Sir Clement," cried Lord Orville, with some heat, "we will discuss this point no further; we are both free agents, and must act for ourselves."

Here Mrs. Selwyn, fearing a furprise, and finding my apprehensions of danger were groundless, retired hattily into another walk; and foon after

came to give me this account.

Good Heaven, what a man is this Sir Clement! fo defigning, though fo easy! fo deliberately artful, though fo flighty! Greatly, however, is he miltaken, all-confident as he feems; for the girl, obscure, poor, dependant as she is, far from wishing the honour of his alliance, would not only now, but always have rejected it.

As to Lord Orville; -but I will not trust my pen to mention him:—tell me, my dear Sir, what you think of him?—tell me if he is not the noblett of men?-and if you can either wonder at or blame

my admiration?

The idea of being feen by either party, immediately after fo fingular a converfation, was both awkward and distressing to me; but I was obliged to appear at dinner. Sir Clement, I faw, was abfent and uneafy: he watched me, he watched Lord Orville, and was evidently disturbed in his mind. Whenever he spoke to me, I turned from him with undifguifed difdain; for I am too much irritated against him to bear with his ill-meant affiduities any longer.

But not once-not a moment, did I dare meet the eyes of Lord Orville! All consciousness myself, I dreaded his penetration, and directed mine every way-but towards his. The rest of the day I never

quitted Mrs. Selwyn.

Adieu, my dear Sir: to-morrow I expect your directions whether I am to return to Berry Hill, or once more to vifit London.

# LETTER XXXI.

EVELINA in Continuation.

AND now, my dearest Sir, if the purturbation of my spirits will allow me, I will finish my last letter from Clifton Hill.

This.

This morning, though I did not go down stairs early, Lord Orville was the only person in the parlour, when I entered it. I felt no small confusion at seeing him alone, after having so long and successfully avoided such a meeting. As soon as the usual compliments were over, I would have left the room; but he stopped me, by saying, "If I disturb you, Miss Anville, I am gone."

"My Lord," faid I, rather embarrassed, "I

did not mean to flay."

"I flattered myself," cried he, "I should have

had a moment's conversation with you."

I then turned back; and he feemed himself in some perplexity: but after a short pause, "You are very good," said he, "to indulge my request; I have, indeed, for some time past, most ardently defired an opportunity of speaking to you."

Again he paufed; but I faid nothing; fo he

went on.

"You allowed me, Madam, a few days fince, you allowed me to lay claim to your friendship,—to interest myself in your affairs,—to call you by the affectionate title of sister;—and the honour you did me no man could have been more sensible of: I am ignorant, therefore, how I have been so unfortunate as to forfeit it:—but, at present, all is changed! you sly me;—your averted eye shuns to meet mine, and you sedulously avoid my conversation."

I was extremely disconcerted at this grave and but too just accusation, and I am sure I must look very

fimple; -but I made no answer.

"You will not, I hope," continued he, "condemn me unheard: if there is any thing I have done,—or any thing I have neglected, tell me, I befeech you, what; and it shall be the whole study of my thoughts how to deferve your pardon."

"Oh, my Lord," cried I, penetrated at once with shame and gratitude, "your too, too great politeness oppresses me!—you have done nothing, I have

never dreamt of offence;—if there is any pardon to be asked, it is rather for me than for you to ask it."

"You are all fweetness and condescension!" cried he; "and I flatter myself you will again allow me to claim those titles which I find myself so unable to forego. Yet, occupied as I am with an idea which gives me the severest uneasiness, I hope you will not think me impertinent if I still solicit, still intreat, may, implore you to tell me, to what cause your late sudden, and to me most painful, reserve was owing?"

" Indeed, my Lord," faid I, stammering; " I

don't,-I can't,-indeed, my Lord,-"

"I am forry to distress you," said he, "and assamed to be so urgent;—yet I know not how to be satisfied while in ignorance;—and the time when the change happened makes me apprehend—may I, Miss Anville, tell you what it makes me apprehend?"

" Certainly, my Lord."

"Tell me, then,—and pardon a question most effentially important to me;—Had, or had not, Sir Clement Willoughby any share in causing your inquietude?"

" No, my Lord," answered I, with firmness;

" none in the world."

"A thousand, thousand thanks!" cried he: "you have relieved me from a weight of conjecture which I supported very painfully. But one thing more: Is it in any measure to Sir Clement that I may attribute the alteration in your behaviour to myself, which, I could not but observe, began the very day of his arrival at the Hot-wells?"

"To Sir Clement, my Lord," faid I, "attribute nothing. He is the last man in the world who would

have any influence over my conduct."

"And will you, then, reftore to me that fhare of confidence and favour with which you honoured me before he came?"

Just then, to my great relief,—for I knew not what to say,—Mrs. Beaumont opened the door, and in a few minutes we went to breakfast.

Lord

100

YOU

par

YOU

VO

pu

fai

to .

1

who

fat I

he n

dear

be e

the

nes

Lord Orville was all gaiety; never did I fee him more lively or more agreeable. Very foon after, Sir Clement Willoughby called, to pay his respects, he said, to Mrs. Beaumont. I then came to my own room, where, indulging my reslections, which now soothed, and now alarmed me, I remained very quietly, till I received your most kind letter.

Oh Sir, how sweet are the prayers you offer for your Evelina! how grateful to her are the blessings you pour upon her head!—You commit me to my real parent:—Ah, Guardian, Friend, Protector of my youth,—by whom my helples infancy was cherished, my mind formed, my very life preserved;—you are the Parent my heart acknowledges, and to you do I yow eternal duty, gratitude, and affection!

I look forward to the approaching interview with more fear than hope; but, important as is this fubject, I am just now wholly engrossed with another, which I must hasten to communicate.

I immediately acquainted Mrs. Selwyn with the purport of your letter. She was charmed to find your opinion agreed with her own, and fettled that we should go to town to-morrow morning; and a chaise is actually ordered to be here by one o'clock.

She then defired me to pack up my clothes; and faid she must go herself to make speeches and tell lies to Mrs. Beaumont.

When I went down stairs to dinner, Lord Orville, who was still in excellent spirits, reproached me for secluding myself so much from the company. He fat next me,—he would sit next me,—at table; and he might, I am sure, repeat what he once said of me before, that he almost exhausted himself in fruitless endeavours to entertain me;—for, indeed, I was not to be entertained: I was totally spiritless and dejected; the idea of the approaching meeting,—and oh, Sir, the idea of the approaching parting,—gave a heaviness to my heart, that I could neither conquer nor

reprefs. I even regretted the half explanation that had passed, and wished Lord Orville had supported his own reserve, and suffered me to support mine.

However, when, during dinner, Mrs. Beaumont spoke of our journey, my gravity was no longer singular; a cloud instantly overspread the countenance of Lord Orville, and he became nearly as thoughtful and as silent as myself.

We all went together to the drawing-room. After a fhort and unentertaining conversation, Mrs. Selwyn said she must prepare for her journey, and begged me to see for some books she had left in the parlour.

And here, while I was looking for them, I was followed by Lord Orville. He that the door after he came in; and approaching me with a look of great anxiety, faid, "Is this true, Miss Anville, are you going?"

"I believe fo, my Lord," faid I, still looking for

the books.

"So fuddenly, fo unexpectedly must I lose you?"

"No great lofs, my Lord," cried I, endeavouring to fpeak cheerfully.

" Is it possible," said he, gravely, " Miss Anville

can doubt my fincerity?"

"I can't imagine," cried I, " what Mrs. Selwyn has done with these books."

"Would to Heaven," continued he, "I might flatter myfelf you would allow me to prove it!"

"I must run up stairs," cried I, greatly confufed, "and ask what she has done with them."

"You are going, then," cried he, taking my hand, "and you give me not the smallest hope of your return!—will you not, then, my too lovely friend!—will you not, at least, teach me, with fortitude like your own, to support your absence?"

"My Lord," cried I, endeavouring to difengage

my hand, " pray let me go!"

"I will;" cried he, to my inexpressible confusion, dropping on one knee, "if you wish to leave me!"

"Oh, my Lord," exclaimed I, " rife, I beseech

you, rise!-such a posture to me!-surely your

Lordship is not so cruel as to mock me!"

"Mock you!" repeated he earnestly, "no, I revere you! I esteem and I admire you above all human beings! you are the friend to whom my soul is attached as to its better half! you are the most amiable, the most perfect of women! and you are dearer to me than language has the power of telling!"

I attempt not to describe my sensations at that moment; I scarce breathed; I doubted if I existed,—the blood forsook my cheeks, and my seet resused to sustain me: Lord Orville, hastily rising, supported me to a chair, upon which I sunk, almost lifeless.

For a few minutes we neither of us spoke; and then, seeing me recover, Lord Orville, though in terms hardly articulate, intreated my pardon for his abruptness. The moment my strength returned, I attempted to rise, but he would not permit me.

I cannot write the scene that followed, though every word is engraven on my heart: but his protestations, his expressions, were too flattering for repetition: nor would he, in spite of my repeated efforts to leave him, suffer me to escape;—in short, my dear Sir, I was not proof against his solicitations—and he drew from me the most facred secret of my heart!

I know not how long we were together; but Lord Orville was upon his knees when the door was opened by Mrs. Selwyn!—To tell you, Sir, the shame with which I was overwhelmed, would be impossible;—I snatched my hand from Lord Orville—he, too, started and rose; and Mrs. Selwyn, for some instants, stood facing us both in silence.

At last, "My Lord," faid she, farcastically, "have you been so good as to help Miss Anville to look for my books?"

"Yes, Madam," answered he, attempting to rally, and I hope we shall soon be able to find them."

"Your Lordship is extremely kind," said she drily, "but I can by no means consent to take up any VOL. 11.

K more

more of your time." Then, looking on the windowfeat, the prefently found the books; and added, "Come, here are just three, and so, like the servants in the Drummer, this important affair may give employment to us all." She then presented one of them to Lord Orville, another to me, and taking a third herfelf, with a most provoking look, she left the room.

I would inftantly have followed her; but Lord Orville, who could not help laughing, begged me to flay a minute, as he had many important mat-

ters to discuss.

"No, indeed, my Lord, I cannot—perhaps I have already stayed too long."

" Does Miss Anville so soon repent her good-

ness?"

"I fcarce know what I do, my Lord, -I am

quite bewildered!"

"One hour's conversation," cried he, "will, I hope, compose your spirits, and confirm my happiness. When, then, may I hope to see you alone?—shall you walk in the garden to-morrow before breakfast?"

"No, no, my Lord, you must not, a second time, reproach me with making an appointment."

"Do you then," faid he, laughing, "referve that honour only for Mr. Macartney?"

"Mr. Macartney," faid I, "is poor, and thinks

himself obliged to me; otherwise-"

"Poverty," cried he, "I will not plead; but, if being obliged to you has any weight, who shall dispute my title to an appointment?"

"My Lord, I can stay no longer, -Mrs. Selwyn.

will lose all patience."

"Deprive her not of the pleasure of her conjectures;—but, tell me, are you under Mrs. Selwyn's care?"

"Only for the present, my Lord."

"Not a few are the questions I have to ask Miss Anville: among them, the most important is, whether she depends wholly on herself, or whether there is any other person for whose interest I must solicit?" " I hardly know, my Lord, I hardly know my-

felf to whom I most belong."

"Suffer, fuffer me, then," cried he, with warmth, "to hasten the time when that shall no longer admit a doubt !--when your grateful Or-

ville may call you all his own!"

At length, but with difficulty, I broke from him. I went, however, to my own room, for I was too much agitated to follow Mrs. Selwyn. Good God, my dear Sir, what a scene! furely the meeting for which I shall prepare to-morrow cannot fo greatly affeet me! To be loved by Lord Orville, -to be the honoured choice of his noble heart, -my happiness feemed too infinite to be borne, and I wept, even bitterly I wept, from the excess of joy which overpowered me.

In this state of almost painful felicity, I continued, till I was summoned to tea. When I re-entered the drawing-room, I rejoiced much to find it full of company, as the confusion with which I met Lord Orville was rendered the less observable.

Immediately after tea, most of the company played at cards ; -and then, -and till supper-time,

Lord Orville devoted himself wholly to me.

He faw that my eyes were red, and would not let me rest till he had made me confess the cause; and when, though most reluctantly, I had acknowledged my weakness, I could with difficulty refrain from weeping again at the gratitude he expressed.

He earnestly defired to know if my journey could not be postponed; and when I said no, intreated

permission to attend me to town.

pinds from feore

"Oh, my Lord," cried I, "what a request!"

"The fooner," answered he, "I make my devotion to you public, the fooner I may expect, from your delicacy, you will convince the world you encourage no mere danglers."

"You teach me, then, my Lord, the inference I

might expect, if I complied."

"And can you wonder I should seek to hasten

the happy time, when no scruples, no discretion will demand our separation? and when the most punctilious delicacy will rather promote, than oppose, my happiness in attending you?"

To this I was filent, and he re-urged his requelt.

"My Lord," faid I, "you ask what I have no power to grant. This journey will deprive me of all right to act for myfelf."

"What does Miss Anville mean?"

"I cannot now explain myself; indeed, if I could, the task would be both painful and tedious."

"O Mifs Anville," cried he, "when may I hope to date the period of this mystery? when flatter myfelf that my promised friend will indeed ho-

nour me with her confidence?"

"My Lord," faid I, "I mean not to affect any mystery; -but my affairs are so circumstanced, that a long and most unhappy story can alone explain them. However, if a short suspense will give your Lord-

Thip any uneafiness-"

"My beloved Miss Anville," cried he eagerly, " pardon my impatience !- You shall tell me nothing you would wish to conceal; - I will wait your own time for information, and trust to your goodness for its speed."

"There is nothing, my Lord, I wish to conceal;

-to postpone an explanation is all I defire."

He then requested, that fince I would not allow him to accompany me to town, I would permit him to write to me, and promise to answer his letters.

A fudden recollection of the two letters which had already passed between us occurring to me, I haftily answered, "No indeed, my Lord !--"

"I am extremely forry," faid he, gravely, " that you think me too presumptuous. I must own I had flattered myself, that to soften the inquietude of an abfence, which feems attended by fo many inexplicable circumstances, would not have been to incur your displeasure."

This feriousness hurt me; and I could not for-

bear

bear faying, "Can you indeed defire, my Lord, that I should a second time, expose myself, by an unguarded readiness to write to you?

" A second time! unguarded readiness!" repeated

he; "you amaze me!"

"Has your Lordship then quite forgot the foolish letter I was so imprudent as to send you when in town?"

"I have not the least idea," cried he, "of what

you mean."

etion

ne of

nay I

"Why then, my Lord," faid I, "we had better let the subject drop."

"Impossible!" cried he, "I cannot rest without

an explanation!"

And then, he obliged me to speak very openly of both the letters; but, my dear Sir, imagine my surprise, when he assured me, in the most solemn manner, that far from having ever written me a single line, he had never received, seen, or heard of my letter!

This subject, which caused mutual astonishment and perplexity to us both, entirely engrossed us for the rest of the evening; and he made me promise to show him the letter I had received in his name to-morrow morning, that he might endeavour to discover the author.

After supper, the conversation became general.

And now, my dearest Sir, may I not call for your congratulations upon the events of this day? a day never to be recollected by me but with the most grateful joy! I know how much you are inclined to think well of Lord Orville; I cannot, therefore, apprehend that my frankness to him will displease you. Perhaps the time is not very distant when your Evelina's choice may receive the fanction of her best friend's judgment and approbation,—which seems now all she has to wish!

In regard to the change of my fituation which must first take place, surely I cannot be blamed for what has passed! the partiality of Lord Orville must not only resect honour upon me, but upon all to whom I do, or may belong.

Adieu, most dear Sir. I will write again when I

arrive at London.

#### LETTER XXXII.

EVELINA in Continuation.

Clifton, Oct. 7.

You will fee, my dear Sir, that I was mistaken in supposing I should write no more from this place, where my residence, now, seems more uncertain than ever.

This morning, during breakfast, Lord Orville took an opportunity to beg me, in a low voice, to allow him a moment's conversation before I left Clifton: "May I hope," added he, "that you will

ftroll into the garden after breakfast?"

I made no answer, but I believe my looks gave no denial; for, indeed, I much wished to be fatisfied concerning the letter. The moment, therefore, that I could quit the parlour, I ran up stairs for my calash; but before I reached my room, Mrs. Selwyn called after me, "If you are going to walk, Miss Anville, be so good as to bid Jenny bring down my hat, and I'll accompany you."

Very much disconcerted, I turned into the drawing-room, without making any answer; and there I hoped to wait unseen, till she had otherwise disposed of herself. But, in a few minutes, the door opened, and Sir Clement Willoughby entered.

Starting at the fight of him, in rifing hastily, I let drop the letter which I had brought for LordOrville's inspection; and, before I could recover it, Sir Clement, springing forward, had it in his hand. He was just presenting it to me, and, at the same time, inquiring after my health, when the signature caught his eye, and he read aloud "Orville."

I endeavoured, eagerly, to fnatch it from him, but he would not permit me; and, holding it fast, in a paffionate manner exclaimed, "Good God, Miss Anville, is it possible you can value such a letter as this?"

The question surprised and confounded me, and I

11/25

was too much ashamed to answer him; but finding he made an attempt to secure it, I prevented him, and vehemently demanded him to return it.

"Tell me first," said he, holding it above my reach, "tell me if you have, since, received any more letters from the same person?"

" No, indeed," cried I, "never!"

"And will you, also, sweetest of women, promise that you never will receive any more? Say that, and you will make me the happiest of men."

"Sir Clement," cried I, greatly confused, "pray

give me the letter."

"And will you not first satisfy my doubts?—will you not relieve me from the torture of the most distracting suspense?—tell me but that the detested Orville has written to you no more!"

"Sir Clement," cried I, angrily, "you have no right to make any conditions,—fo pray give me the

letter directly."

"Why such solicitude about this hateful letter? can it possibly deserve your cagerness? tell me, with truth, with sincerity tell me, does it really merit the least anxiety."

" No matter, Sir," cried I, in great perplexity,

" the letter is mine, and therefore—"

"I must conclude, then," said he, "that the letter deserves your utmost contempt, -- but that the name of Orville is sufficient to make you prize it."

" Sir Clement," cried I, colouring, " you are

quite-you are very much-the letter is not-"

"O Miss Anville," cried he, "you blush!—you stammer!—Great Heaven! it is then all as I feared!"

"I know not," cried I, half frightened, "what you mean; but I beseech you to give me the letter,

and to compose yourfelt."

"The letter," cried he, gnashing his teeth, you shall never see more! You ought to have burnt it the moment you had read it!" And in an instant he tore it into a thousand pieces.

Alarmed

Alarmed at a fury so indecently outrageous, I would have run out of the room; but he caught hold of my gown, and cried, "Not yet, not yet must you go! I am but half mad yet, and you must say to finish your work. Tell me, therefore, does Orville know your fatal partiality?—Say yes," added he, trembling with passion, "and I will sly you for ever!"

" For Heaven's fake, Sir Clement," cried I, release me!—if you do not, you will force me to

call for help."

"Call then," cried he, "inexorable and most unfeeling girl; call, if you please, and bid all the world witness your triumph;—but could ten worlds obey your call, I would not part from you till you had answered me. Tell me, then, does Orville know you love him?"

At any other time, an enquiry so gross would have given me inexpressible confusion; but now, the wildness of his manner terrified me, and I only said, "Whatever you wish to know, Sir Clement, I will tell you another time; but for the pre-

fent, I intreat you to let me go!"

"Enough," cried he, "I understand you!—the art of Orville has prevailed;—cold, inanimate, phlegmatic as he is, you have rendered him the most envied of men!—One thing more, and I have done:
—Will he marry you?"

What a question! my cheeks glowed with indignation, and I felt too proud to make any answer.

"I fee, I fee how it is," cried he, after a short pause, "and I find I am undone for ever!" Then, letting loose my gown, he put his hand to his forehead, and walked up and down the room in a hasty and agitated manner.

Though now at liberty to go, I had not the courage to leave him: for his evident distress excited all my compassion. And this was our situation, when Lady Louisa, Mr. Coverley, and Mrs. Beaumont

entered the room.

" Sir Clement Willoughby," faid the latter, "I beg pardon for making you wait fo long, but-"

She had not time for another word; Sir Clement, too much disordered to know or care what he did, snatched up his hat, and, bursting hastily past her,

flew down stairs, and out of the house.

And with him went my fincerest pity, though I earnestly hope I shall see him no more. But what, my dear Sir, am I to conclude from his strange speeches concerning the letter? does it not feem as if he was himself the author of it? How else should he be fo well acquainted with the contempt it merits? Neither do I know another human being who could ferve any interest by fuch a deception. I remember, too, that just as I had given my own letter to the maid, Sir Clement came into the shop; probably he prevailed upon her, by fome bribery, to give it to him; and afterwards, by the fame means, to deliver to me an answer of his own writing. Indeed I can in no other manner account for this affair. Oh, Sir Clement, were you not yourself unhappy, I know not how I could pardon an artifice that has caused me so much uneasiness!

His abrupt departure occasioned a kind of general

consternation.

"very extraordinary behaviour this!" cried Mrs. Beaumont.

"Egad," faid Mr. Coverley, the Baronet has a mind to tip us a touch of the heroics this morning!"

"I declare," cried Lady Louisa, "I never saw any thing so monstrous in my life! it's quite abominable;—I fancy the man's mad;—I'm sure he has given me a shocking fright!"

Soon after, Mrs. Selwyn came up stairs with Lord Merton. The former, advancing hastily to me, faid, "Miss Anville, have you an almanack?"

" Me!—no, Madam."
"Who has one, then?"

" Egad," cried Mr. Coverley, "I never bought

one in my life; it would make me quite melancholy to have fuch a time-keeper in my pocket. I would as foon walk all day before an hour-glass."

"You are in the right," faid Mrs. Selwyn, "not to watch time, lest you should be betrayed, unawares,

into reflecting how you employ it."

"Egad, Ma'am," cried he, "if Time thought no more of me, than I do of Time, I believe I should bid defiance, for one while, to old age and wrinkles; for deuce take me if ever I think about it at all."

"Pray, Mr. Coverley," faid Mrs. Selwyn, "why do you think it necessary to tell me this so often?"

"Often!" repeated he; "Egad, Madam, I don't know why I faid it now;—but I'm fure I can't recollect that ever I owned as much before."

"Owned it before!" cried she, "why, my dear Sir, you own it all day long; for every word, every

look, every action proclaims it."

I know not if he understood the full severity of her satire, but he only turned off with a laugh: and she then applied to Mr. Lovel, and asked if he had an almanack?

Mr. Lovel, who always looks alarmed when she addresses him, with some hesitation answered, I assure you, Ma'am, I have no manner of antipathy to an almanack,—none in the least,—I assure you;—I dare say I have sour or sive."

" Four or five!-pray, may I ask what use

you make of fo many?"

"Use!—really, Ma'am, as to that,—I don't make any particular use of them;—but one must have them, to tell one the day of the month;—I'm sure, else, I should never keep it in my head."

"And does your time pass so smoothly unmarked, that, without an almanack, you could not distin-

guish one day from another?"

"Really, Ma'am," cried he, colouring, "I don't fee any thing fo very particular in having a few almanacks; other people have them, I believe, as well as me."

" Don'

"Don't be offended," cried she, "I have but made a little digression. All I want to know is, the state of the moon; - for if it is at the full, I shall be faved a world of conjectures, and know at once to what cause to attribute the inconsistencies I have witnessed this morning. In the first place, I heard Lord Orville excuse himself from going out, because he had business of importance to transact at home; -yet have I feen him fauntering alone in the garden this half hour. Miss Anville, on the other hand, I invited to walk out with me; and, after feeking her every where round the house, I find her quietly feated in the drawing-room. And but a few minutes fince, Sir Clement Willoughby, with even more than his usual politeness, told me he was come to fpend the morning here ;-when, just now, I met him flying down stairs, as if purfued by the Furies; and, far from repeating his compliments, or making any excuse, he did not even answer a question I asked him, but rushed past me, with the rapidity of a thief from a bailiff?"

" I protest," said Mrs. Beaumont, " I can't think what he meant; such rudeness, from a man of

any family, is quite incomprehensible."

"My Lord," cried Lady Louisa, to Lord Merton,
"Do you know he did the same by me?—I was
just going to ask him what was the matter; but he
ran past me so quick, that I declare he quite dazzled my eyes. You can't think, my Lord, how he
frightned me; I dare say I look as pale—don't I
look very pale, my Lord?"

"Your Ladyship," faid Mr. Lovel, " so well becomes the lilies, that the roses might blush to see

themselves so excelled."

why

he

"Pray, Mr. Lovel," faid Mrs. Selwyn, "if the rofes should blush, how would you find it out?"

"Egad," cried Mr. Coverley, " I suppose they must blush, as the saying is, like a blue dog,—for they are red already."

" Prithee,

" Prithee, Jack," faid Lord Merton, "don't you pretend to talk about blushes, that never knew what

they were in your life."

"My Lord," faid Mrs. Selwyn, "if experience alone can justify mentioning them, what an admirable treatife, upon the subject, may we not expect from your Lordship!"

"O, pray, Ma'am," answered he, "flick to Jack Coverley, -he's your only man; for my part, I con-

fess I have a mortal aversion to arguments."

" O fie, my Lord," cried Mrs. Selwyn, "a fenator of the nation! a member of the noblest parliament in the world !- and yet neglect the art of oratory !"

"Why, faith, my Lord," faid Mr. Lovel, " I think, in general, your House is not much addicted to study; we of the Lower House have indubitably most application; and, if I did not speak before a superior power," bowing low to Lord Merton, " I should prefume to add, we have likewise the most able speakers."

"Mr. Lovel," faid Mrs. Selwyn, "you deferve immortality for that discovery! but for this observation, and the confession of Lord Merton, I protest I should have supposed that a peer of the realm, and

an able logician, were fynonymous terms." Lord Merton, turned upon his heel, asked Lady

Louisa if the should take the air before dinner?

"Really," answered she, "I don't know; -I'm afraid 'tis monstrous hot; besides, (putting her hand to her forehead) I an't half well; it's quite horrid to have fuch weak nerves!-the least thing in the world discomposes me: I declare, that man's oddness has given me fuch a shock,-I don't know when I shall recover from it. But I'm a fad weak creature ;don't you think I am, my Lord?"

.. O, by no means," answered he, " your Ladythip is merely delicate, and devil take me if ever I

had the least passion for an Amazon."

"I have the honour to be quite of your Lordship's opinion," faid Mr. Lovel, looking maliciously at Mrs. Selwyn;

Selwyn; " for I have an insuperable aversion to strength, either of body or mind, in a female."

"Faith, and fo have I," faid Mr. Coverley; for egad, I'd as foon fee a woman chop wood,

as hear her chop logic."

"So would every man in his fenses," said Lord Merton; "for a woman wants nothing to recommend her but beauty and good-nature; in every thing else she is either impertinent or unnatural. For my part, deuce take me if ever I wish to hear a word

of fense from a woman as long as I live!"

"It has always been agreed," faid Mrs. Selwyn, looking round her with the utmost contempt, "that no man ought to be connected with a woman whose understanding is superior to his own. Now I very much fear, that to accommodate all this good company, according to such a rule, would be utterly impracticable, unless we should choose subjects from Swift's hospital of idiots."

How many enemies, my dear Sir, does this unbounded feverity excite! Lord Merton, however, only whistled; Mr. Coverly sang; and Mr. Lovel, after biting his lips some time, said, "'Pon honour, that lady—if she was not a lady,—I should be half tempted to observe,—that there is something,—in such severity,—that is rather, I must say,—rather addish."

Just then a servant brought Lady Louisa a note upon a waiter, which is a ceremony always used to her Ladyship; and I took the opportunity of this interruption to the conversation to steal out of the room.

I went immediately to the parlour, which I found quite empty; for I did not dare walk in the garden

after what Mrs. Selwin had faid.

In a few minutes a fervant announced Mr.Macartney; faying, as he entered the room, that he would acquaint Lord Orville he was there.

Mr. Macartney rejoiced much at finding me alone. He told me he had taken the liberty to in-

quire

quire for Lord Orville, by way of pretext for coming to the house.

I then very eagerly inquired if he had feen his

father.

"I have, Madam," faid he; "and the generous compassion you have shown, made me hasten to acquaint you, that upon reading my unhappy mother's letter, he did not hesitate to acknowledge me."

"Good God," cried I, with no little emotion, how fimilar are our circumstances! And did he

receive you kindly?"

"I could not, Madam, expect that he would: the cruel transaction which obliged me to fly Paris, was recent in his memory."

" And,-have you feen the young lady?"

"No, Madam," faid he mournfully, "I was forbid her fight.

" Forbid her fight !- and why?"

"Partly, perhaps, from prudence,—and partly from the remains of a refentment which will not eafily subside. I only requested leave to acquaint her with my relationship, and be allowed to call her sister;—but it was denied me!" "You have no sister," faid Sir John, "you must forget her existence. Hard, and vain command!"

"You have—you have a fifter!" cried I, from an impulse of pity, which I could not repress; "a fifter who is most warmly interested in your welfare, and who only wants opportunity to manifest her friendship and regard."

"Gracious Heaven!" cried he, "what does Miss

Anville mean?"

"Anville," faid I, "is not my real name; Sir John Belmont is my father,—he is your's,—and I am your fister!—You see, therefore, the claim we mutually have to each other's regard; we are not merely bound by the ties of friendship, but by those of blood. I feel for you, already, all the affection of a fister;—I felt it, indeed, before I knew I was

one.—Why, my dear brother, do you not speak?—do you hesitate to acknowledge me?"

"I am so lost in astonishment," cried he, "that

I know not if I hear right!"-

" I have, then, found a brother," cried I, holding

out my hand, "and he will not own me!"

"Own you!—Oh, Madam," cried he, accepting my offered hand, "is it, indeed, possible you can own me?—a poor, wretched adventurer! who so lately had no support but from your generosity?—whom your benevolence snatched from utter destruction?—Can you,—Oh, Madam, can you, indeed, and without a blush, condescend to own such at outcast for a brother?"

"Oh, forbear, forbear," cried I, " is this language proper for a fifter? are we not reciprocally bound to each other?—Will you not fuffer me to expect from you all the good offices in your power? —But tell me, where is our father at prefent?"

"At the Hotwells, Madam; he arrived there

yesterday morning."

20

I would have proceeded with further questions, but the entrance of Lord Orville prevented me. The moment he saw us, he started, and would have retreated; but, drawing my hand from Mr. Macartney's, I begged him to come in.

For a few minutes we were all filent, and, I believe, all in equal confusion. Mr. Macartney, however, recollecting himself, said, "I hope your Lordship will forgive the liberty I have taken in making use of your name?"

Lord Orville, rather coldly, bowed, but faid

nothing.

Again we were all filent, and then Mr. Mac-

artney took leave.

"I fancy," faid Lord Orville, when he was gone, "I have shortened Mr. Macartney's visit?"

" No, my Lord, not at all."

" I had prefumed," faid he, with fome hesitation,

"I should have seen Miss Anville in the garden;—but I knew not she was so much better engaged."

Before I could answer, a servant came to tell me the chaise was ready, and that Mrs. Selwyn was in-

quiring for me.

"I will wait on her immediately," cried I, and away I was running; but Lord Orville, stopping me, faid, with great emotion, "Is it thus, Miss Anville, you leave me?"

"My Lord," cried I, "how can I help it?—perhaps, foon, fome better opportunity may offer—"

"Good Heaven!" cried he, "do you, indeed, take me for a Stoic? What better opportunity may I hope for?—is not the chaife come?—are you not going? have you even deigned to tell me whither?"

"My journey, my Lord, will now be deferred. Mr. Macartney has brought me intelligence which

renders it at present unnecessary."

"Mr. Macartney," faid he, gravely, "feems to have great influence;—yet he is a very young counfellor."

" Is it possible, my Lord, Mr. Macartney can

give you the least uneafiness?"

"My dearest Miss Anville," said he, taking my hand, "I see, and I adore the purity of your mind, superior as it is to all little arts, and all apprehensions of suspicion; and I should do myself, as well as you, injustice, if I were capable of harbouring the smallest doubts of that goodness which makes you mine for ever: nevertheless, pardon me, if I own myself surprised,—nay, alarmed, at these frequent meetings with so young a man as Mr. Macartney."

"My Lord," cried I, eager to clear myfelf, "Mr.

Macartney is my brother!"

"Your brother! you amaze me!—What strange mystery, then, makes his relationship a secret?"

Just then Mrs. Selwin opened the door. "O, you are here!" cried she: "Pray, is my Lord so kind as to affist you in preparing for your journey, or in retarding it?"

" I should

"I should be most happy," said Lord Orville, smiling, "if it were in my power to do the latter."

I then acquainted her with Mr. Macartney's com-

munication.

She immediately ordered the chaife away; and then took me into her own room to confider what should be done.

A few minutes sufficed to determine her; and she wrote the following note.

# To Sir John Belmont, Bart.

"MRS. SELWYN prefents her compliments to Sir John Belmont; and if he is at leifure, will be glad to wait on him this morning, upon business of importance."

She then ordered her man to inquire at the pumproom for a direction; and went herself to Mrs. Beaumont to apologise for deferring her journey.

An answer was presently returned, that he would

be glad to see her.

She would have had me immediately accompany her to the Hotwells; but I intreated her to spare me the distress of so abrupt an introduction, and to pave the way for my reception. She confented rather reluctantly, and, attended only by her servant, walked to the Wells.

She was not abfent two hours; yet so miserably did time seem to linger, that I thought a thousand accidents had happened, and seared she would never return. I passed the whole time in my own room, for I was too much agitated even to converse with Lord Orville.

The instant that, from my window, I saw her returning, I slew down stairs, and met her in the garden.

We both walked to the arbour.

Her looks, in which disappointment and anger were expressed, presently announced to me the failure of her embassy. Finding that she did not

fpeak,

fpeak, I asked her, in a faultering voice, Whether or not I had a father?

"You have not, my dear!" faid the abruptly.

"Very well, Madam," faid I, with tolerable calmness, "let the chaise, then, be ordered again; —I will go to Berry Hill;—and there, I trust, I shall still find one!"

It was fome time ere she could give, or I could hear the account of her visit; and then she related it in a hasty manner; yet I believe I can recol-

lect every word.

I found Sir John alone. He received me with the utmost politeness. I did not keep him a moment in fuspense as to the purport of my visit. But I had no fooner made it known, than, with a supercilious smile, he faid, "And have you, Madam, been prevailed upon to revive that ridiculous old flory?" Ridiculous, I told him, was a term which he would find no one elfe. do him the favour to make use of, in speaking of the horrible actions belonging to the old flory he made fo light of; "actions," continued I, "which would dve still deeper the black annals of Nero or Caligula." He attempted in vain to rally; for I purfued him with all the feverity in my power, and ceased not painting the enormity of his crime, till I stung him to the quick, and, in a voice of passion and impatience, he faid, "No more, Madam, -this is not a subject upon which I need a monitor." "Make, then," cried I, " the only reparation in your power. - Your daughter is now at Clifton; fend for her hither; and, in the face of the world, proclaim the legitimacy of her birth, and clear the reputation of your injured wife." "Madam," faid he, "you are much mistaken, if you suppose I waited for the honour of this visit, before I did what little justice now depends upon me, to the memory of that unfortunate woman: her daughter has been my care from her infancy; I have taken her into my house; she bears my name, and she will

be my fole heirefs." For fome time this affertion appeared fo absurd, that I only laughed at it: but, at last, he assured me, I had myself been imposed upon; for that the very woman who attended Lady Belmont in her last illness, conveyed the child to him while he was in London, before the was a year old. "Unwilling," he added, "at that time to confirm the rumour of my being married, I fent the woman with the child to France: as foon as she was old enough, I put her into a convent, where she has been properly educated; and now I have taken her home. I have acknowledged her for my lawful child, and paid, at length, to the memory of her unhappy mother, a tribute of fame, which has made me wish to hide myself hereafter from all the world." This whole ftory founded fo improbable, that I did not fcruple to tell him I discredited every word. He then rung his bell; and inquiring if his hair-dreffer was come, faid he was forry to leave me; but that, if I would favour him with my company to-morrow, he would do himself the honour of introducing Miss Belmont to me, instead of troubling me to introduce her to him. I role in great indignation; and affuring him I would make his conduct as public as it was infamous—I left the house.

Good Heaven, how strange the recital! how incomprehensible an affair! The Miss Belmont, then, who is actually at Bristol, passes for the daughter of my unhappy mother!—passes, in short, for your Evelina! Who she can be, or what this tale can

mean, I have not any idea.

Mrs. Selwyn foon after left me to my own reflections. Indeed they were not very pleafant. Quietly as I had borne her relation, the moment I was alone I felt most bitterly both the disgrace and the sorrow

of a rejection fo cruelly inexplicable.

I know not how long I might have continued in this fituation, had I not been awakened from my

I was filent, and he seated himself next me.

"I fear," he continued, "Miss Anville will think I persecute her; yet so much as I have to say, and so much as I wish to hear, with so few opportunities for either, she cannot wonder,—and I hope she will not be offended,—that I seize with such avidity every moment in my power to converse with her. You are grave," added he, taking my hand; "I hope you do not regret the delay of your journey?—I hope the pleasure it gives to me, will not be a subject of pain to you?—You are silent!—Something, I am sure, has afflicted you:—Would to Heaven I were able to console you!—Would to Heaven I were worthy to participate in your forrows!"

My heart was too full to bear this kindness, and I could only answer by my tears. "Good Heaven," cried he, "how you alarm me!—My love, my sweet Miss Anville, deny me no longer to be the sharer of your griefs!—tell me, at least, that you have not withdrawn your esteem!—that you do not repent the goodness you have shown me!—that you still think me the same grateful Orville, whose heart

you have deigned to accept!"

"Oh, my Lord," cried I, "your generofity overpowers me!" And I wept like an infant. For now, that all my hopes of being acknowledged feemed finally crushed, I felt the nobleness of his disinterested regard so forcibly, that I could fearce breathe under the weight of gratitude which oppressed me.

He feemed greatly shocked; and in terms the most flattering, the most respectfully tender, he at once soothed my distress, and urged me to tell him its cause.

"My Lord," faid I, when I was able to fpeak, "you little know what an outcast you have honoured with your choice!—a child of bounty,—an orphan from infancy,—dependant, even for subsistence dependent, upon the kindness of compassion!—Rejected by my natural friends,—disowned for ever by my nearest relation,—Oh, my Lord, so circumstanced, can I deserve the distinction with which you

honour

honour me? No, no, I feel the inequality too painfully;—you must leave me, my Lord, you must suffer me to return to obscurity; and there, in the bosom of my first, best, my only friend,—I will pour forth all the grief of my heart!—while you, my Lord, must seek elsewhere—"

I could not proceed; my whole foul recoiled against the charge I would have given, and my voice refused to utter it.

nope nope

am

W,

"Never," cried he, warmly; "my heart is yours, and I fwear to you an attachment eternal!—You prepare me, indeed, for a tale of horror, and I am almost breathless with expectation;—but so firm is my conviction, that, whatever are your misfortunes, to have merited them is not of the number, that I feel myself more strongly, more invincibly devoted to you than ever!—Tell me but where I may find this noble friend, whose virtues you have already taught me to reverence,—and I will sly to obtain his consent and intercession, that henceforward our fates may be indissolubly united;—and then shall it be the sole study of my life to endeavour to soften your past,—and guard you from future missortunes!"

I had just raised my eyes to answer this most generous of men, when the first object they met was Mrs. Selwyn!

"So, my dear," cried she, "what, still courting the rural shades!—I thought ere now you would have been satisfied with this retired seat, and I have been seeking you all over the house. But I find the only way to meet with you,—is to inquire for Lord Orville. However, don't let me disturb your meditations; you are possibly planning some pastoral dialogue."

And, with this provoking speech, she walked on.
In the greatest confusion I was quitting the arbour, when Lord Orville said, "Permit me to follow Mrs. Selwyn;—it is time to put an end to all impertinent conjectures; will you allow me to speak to her openly?"

I affented in filence, and he left me.

I then went to my own room, where I continued till I was fummoned to dinner; after which, Mrs. Selwyn invited me to her's.

The moment she had shut the door, "Your La-

dyship," faid she, "will, I hope, be seated."

" Ma'am!" cried I, staring.

"O the fweet innocent! So you don't know what I mean?—but, my dear, my fole view is to accustom you a little to your dignity elect, lest, when you are addressed by your title, you should look another way, from an apprehension of listening to a dis-

course not meant for you to hear."

Having, in this manner, diverted herfelf with my confusion, till her raillery was almost exhausted, she congratulated me very seriously upon the partiality of Lord Orville, and painted to me, in the strongest terms, his disinterested desire of being married to me immediately. She had told him, she said, my whole story; and yet he was willing, nay eager, that our union should take place of any further application to my family. "Now, my dear," continued she, "I advise you by all means to marry him directly; nothing can be more precarious than our success with Sir John; and the young men of this age are not to be trusted with too much time for deliberation, where their interests are concerned."

" Good God, Madam," cried I, " do you think

I would hurry Lord Orville?"

"Well, do as you will," faid she, "luckily you have an excellent subject for Quixotism;—otherwise this delay might prove your ruin: but Lord Orville is almost as romantic as if he had been born and bred at Berry Hill."

She then proposed, as no better expedient seemed likely to be suggested, that I should accompany her at once in her visit to the Hot-wells to-morrow morning.

The very idea made me tremble; yet she reprefented so strongly the necessity of pursuing this unhappy affair with spirit, or giving it totally up, that, wanting her force of argument, I was almost

obliged to yield to her propofal.

In the evening we all walked in the garden: and Lord Orville, who never quitted my fide, told me he had been listening to a tale, which, though it had removed the perplexities that had so long tormented him, had penetrated him with forrow and compassion. I acquainted him with Mrs. Selwyn's plan for tomorrow, and confessed the extreme terror it gave me. He then, in a manner almost unanswerable, befought me to leave to him the conduct of the affair, by confenting to be his before an interview took place.

I could not but acknowledge my fense of his generosity: but I told him I was wholly dependent upon you; and that I was certain your opinion would be the same as mine; which was, that it would be highly improper I should dispose of myself for ever, so very near the time which must finally decide by whose authority I ought to be guided. The subject of this dreaded meeting, with the thousand conjectures and apprehensions to which it gives birth, employed all our conversation then, as it has all my thoughts since.

Heaven only knows how I shall support myself, when the long-expected—the wished—yet terrible moment arrives, that will prostrate me at the feet of the nearest, the most reverenced of all relations, whom my heart yearns to know, and longs to love to

## LETTER XXXIII.

EVELINA in Continuation.

Oct. 9.

I could not write yesterday, so violent was the agitation of my mind;—but I will not, now, lose a moment till I have hastened to my best friend an account of the transactions of a day I can never recollect without emotion.

Mrs.

Mrs. Selwyn determined upon fending no meffage, "Lest," faid she, "Sir John, fatigued with the very idea of my reproaches, should endeavour to avoid a meeting: all we have to do is to take him by surprise. He cannot but see who you are, whether he will do you justice or not."

We went early, and in Mrs. Beaumont's chariot; into which Lord Orville, uttering words of the

kindest encouragement, handed us both.

My uneafiness, during the ride, was excessive; but when we stopped at the door, I was almost senseless with terror! the meeting, at last, was not so dreadful as that moment! I believe I was carried into the house; but I scarce recollect what was done with me: however, I know we remained some time in the parlour before Mrs. Selwyn could fend any message up stairs.

When I was somewhat recovered, I intreated her to let me return home; assuring her I selt myself

quite unequal to supporting the interview.

"No," faid she; "you must stay now: your fears will but gain strength by delay; and we must not have such a shock as this repeated." Then, turning to the servant, she sent up her name.

An answer was brought, that he was going out in great haste, but would attend her immediately. I turned so sick, that Mrs. Selwyn was apprehensive I should have fainted; and opening a door which led to an inner apartment, she begged me to wait there till I was somewhat composed, and till she had prepared for my reception.

Glad of every moment's reprieve, I willingly agreed to the proposal; and Mrs. Selwyn had but just time to shut me in, before her presence was necessary.

The voice of a father—Oh, dear and revered name!—which then, for the first time, struck my ears, affected me in a manner I cannot describe, though it was only employed in giving orders to a fervant as came down stairs.

Then, entering the parlour, I heard him fay, "I am forry, Madam, I made you wait; but I have an

engagement

engagement which now calls me away: however, if you have any commands for me, I shall be glad of the honour of your company some other time."

"I am come, Sir," faid Mrs. Selwyn, "to in-

troduce your daughter to you."

el-

ad.

me:

"I am infinitely obliged to you," answered he; but I have just had the satisfaction of breakfasting with her. Ma'am your most obedient."

"You refuse, then, to see her?"

"I am much indebted to you, Madam, for this defire of increasing my family; but you must excuse me if I decline taking advantage of it. I have already a daughter, to whom I owe every thing; and it is not three days since that I had the pleasure of discovering a son: how many more sons and daughters may be brought to me, I am yet to learn; but I am already perfectly satisfied with the size of my family."

"Had you a thousand children, Sir John," said Mrs. Selwyn warmly, "this only one, of which Lady Belmont was the mother, ought to be most distinguished; and, far from avoiding her fight, you should thank your stars, in humble gratitude, that there yet remains in your power the smallest opportunity of doing the injured wife you have destroyed, the poor

justice of acknowledging her child !"

"I am very unwilling, Madam," answered he, "to enter into any discussion of this point; but you are determined to compel me to speak. There lives not at this time the human being who should talk to me of the regret due to the memory of that ill-stated woman; no one can seel it so severely as myself: but let me, nevertheless, assure you, I have already done all that remained in my power to prove the respect she merited from me; her child I have educated, and owned for my lawful heiress: if, Madam, you can suggest to me any other means by which I may more fully do her justice, and more clearly manifest her innocence, name them to me; and though they should wound my character still deeper, I will perform them readily."

L

"All this founds vaftly well," returned Mrs. Selwyn; "but I must own it is rather too enigmatical for my faculties of comprehension. You can, however, have no objection to seeing this young lady."

" None in the world."

"Come forth, then, my dear," cried she, opening the door; "come forth, and see your father!" Then, taking my trembling hand, she led me forward. I would have withdrawn it and retreated; but as he advanced instantly towards me, I found myself already before him.

What a moment for your Evelina!—an involuntary scream escaped me, and, covering my face with

my hands, I funk on the floor.

He had, however, feen me first; for, in a voice scarce articulate, he exclaimed, "My God! does

Caroline Evelyn still live!"

Mrs. Selwyn faid something, but I could not listen to her; and in a few minutes he added, "List up thy head—if my sight has not blasted thee;—list up thy head, thou image of my long-lost Caroline!" Affected beyond measure, I half arose, and em-

braced his knees while yet on my own.

"Yes, yes," cried he, looking earnestly in my face, "I see, I see thou art her child! she lives,—she breathes,—she is present to my view!—Oh God, that she indeed lived!—Go, child, go," added he, wildly starting, and pushing me from him; "take her away, Madam,—I cannot bear to look at her!" And then, breaking hastily from me, he rushed out of the room.

Speechles, motionless myself, I attempted not to stop him: but Mrs. Selwyn hastening after him, caught hold of his arm; "Leave me, Madam," cried he with quickness, "and take care of the poor child:—bid her not think me unkind; tell her I would at this moment plunge a dagger in my heart to serve her; but she has set my brain on sire; and I can see her no more!" Then, with a violence almost frantic, he ran up stairs.

Oh,

Oh, Sir, had I not indeed cause to dread this interview?—an interview so unspeakably painful and afflicting to us both! Mrs. Selwyn would have immediately returned to Cliston; but I entreated her to wait some time, in the hope that my unhappy father, when his first emotion was over, would again bear me in his sight. However, he soon after sent his servant to inquire how I did; and to tell Mrs. Selwyn he was much indisposed, but would hope for the honour of seeing her tomorrow, at any time she would please to appoint.

She fixed upon ten o'clock in the morning; and then, with a heavy heart, I got into the chariot. Those afflicting words, I can see her no more! were

never a moment absent from my mind.

atical

rever.

openher!"

e for-

ated;

Voice

Yet the fight of Lord Orville, who handed us from the carriage, gave fome relief to the fadness of my thoughts. I could not, however, enter upon the painful subject; but, begging Mrs. Selwyn to fatisfy him, I went to my own room.

As foon as I communicated to the good Mrs. Clinton the prefent fituation of my affairs, an idea occurred to her, which feemed to clear up all the

mystery of my having been so long disowned.

The woman, she says, who attended my everto-be-regretted mother in her last illness, and who nursed me the first four months of my life, soon after being discharged from your house, left Berry Hill entirely, with her baby, who was but six weeks older than myself. Mrs. Clinton remembers, that her quitting the place appeared, at the time, very extraordinary to the neighbours; but as she was never heard of afterwards, she was by degrees quite forgotten.

The moment this was mentioned, it struck Mrs. Selwyn, as well as Mrs. Clinton herself, that my father had been imposed upon; and that the nurse, who said she had brought his child to him, had in

fact carried her own.

The name by which I was known, the secrecy ob-L 2 ferved ferved in regard to my family, and the retirement in which I lived, all conspired to render this scheme, however daring and fraudulent, by no means impracticable; and, in short, the idea was no sooner started than conviction seemed to follow it.

Mrs. Selwyn determined immediately to discover the truth or mistake of this conjecture; therefore, the moment she had dined, she walked to the Hot-

wells, attended by Mrs. Clinton.

I waited in my room till her return; and then

heard the following account of her visit:

She found my poor father in great agitation. She immediately informed him of the occasion of her so speedy return, and of her suspicions of the woman who had pretended to convey to him his child. Interrupting her with quickness, he said he had just sent her from his presence: that the certainty I carried in my countenance of my real birth, made him, the moment he had recovered from a furprise which had almost deprived him of reason, suspect, himself, the imposition she mentioned. He had therefore sent for the woman, and questioned her with the utmost austerity: fhe turned pale, and was extremely embarraffed; but still she persisted in affirming, that she had really brought him the daughter of Lady Belmont. perplexity, he faid, almost distracted him: he had always observed, that his daughter bore no resemblance to either of her parents; but as he had never doubted the veracity of the nurse, this circumstance did not give birth to any suspicion.

At Mrs. Selwyn's defire, the woman was again called, and interrogated with equal art and feverity: her confusion was evident, and her answers often contradictory; yet she still declared she was no impostor. We will see that in a minute," said Mrs. Selwyn; and then defired Mrs. Clinton might be called up stairs. The poor wretch, changing colour, would have escaped out of the room; but being prevented, dropt on her knees, and implored forgiveness. A confession of the whole affair was then extorted from her.

Doubtless,

Doubtless, my dear Sir, you must remember Dame Green, who was my first nurse. The deceit she has practifed was fuggested, she fays, by a conversation the overheard; in which my unhappy mother befought you, that, if her child furvived her, you would take the fole care of its education; and, in particular, if it should be a female, you would by no means part with her in early life. You not only confented, she fays, but affured her you would even retire abroad with me yourfelf, if my father should importunately demand me. Her own child, she faid, was then in her arms; and she could not forbear wishing it were posfible to give her the fortune which feemed fo little valued for me. This wish once raised was not easily suppressed; on the contrary, what at first appeared a mere idle desire, in a short time seemed a seafible scheme. Her husband was dead, and she had little regard for any body but her child; and, in short, having faved money for the journey, she contrived to inquire a direction to my father; and telling her neighbours she was going to settle in Devonshire, she set out on her expedition.

ent

10-

m.

When Mrs. Selwyn asked how she dared perpetrate such a fraud, she protested she had no ill designs; but that, as Miss would be never the worse for it, she thought it pity nobody should be the better.

Her fuccess we are already acquainted with. Indeed every thing seemed to contribute towards it: my father had no correspondent at Berry Hill; the child was instantly sent to France; where, being brought up in as much retirement as myself, nothing but accident could discover the fraud.

And here let me indulge myself in observing, and rejoicing to observe, that the total neglect I thought I met with was not the effect of insensibility or unkindness, but of imposition and error; and that at the very time we concluded I was unnaturally rejected, my deluded father meant to show me most favour and protection.

He acknowledges that Lady Howard's letter flung him into some perplexity: he immediately communicated it to Dame Green, who confessed it was the greatest shock she had ever received in her life; yet the had the art and boldness to affert, that Lady Howard must herself have been deceived; and as she had from the beginning of her enterprise declared she had stolen away the child without your knowledge, he concluded that fome deceit was then intended him; and this thought occasioned his abrupt answer.

Dame Green owned, that from the moment the journey to England was fettled, the gave herfelf up for loft. All her hope was to have had her daughter married before it took place; for which reason she had so much promoted Mr. Macartney's addresses: forthough fuch a match was inadequate to the pretenfions of Miss Belmont, she well knew it was far superior to those ber daughtercould form, after the discovery of her birth.

My first inquiry was, if this innocent daughter was yet acquainted with the affair? No, Mrs. Selwyn faid; nor was any plan fettled how to divulge it to her. Poor unfortunate girl! how hard is her fate! She is intitled to my kindest offices, and I shall always consider her as my fifter.

I then asked whether my father would again allow

me to fee him?

"Why, no, my dear, not yet," answered she; " he declares the fight of you is too much for him: however, we are to fettle every thing concerning you to-morrow; for this woman took up all our time to-day."

This morning, therefore, fhe is again gone to the Hot-well. I am waiting in all impatience for her return: but as I know you will be anxious for the account this letter contains, I will not delay fend-

ing it.

#### LETTER XXXIV.

EVELINA in Continuation.

October 9.

How agitated, my dear Sir, is the prefent life of your Evelina! every day feems important, and one event only a prelude to another.

Mrs. Selwyn, upon her return this morning from the Hot-well, entering my room very abruptly, faid, "Oh, my dear, I have terrible news for you!"

"For me, Ma'am!—Good God! what now!"
"Arm yourfelf," cried she, "with all your Berry Hill philosophy;—con over every lesson of fortitude or resignation you ever learnt in your

life;—for know,—you are next week to be married to Lord Orville!"

Doubt, aftonishment, and a kind of perturbation I cannot describe, made this abrupt communication alarm me extremely; and, almost breathless, I could only exclaim, "Good God, Madam, what do you tell me!"

"You may well be frightned, my dear," faid she ironically; "for really there is fomething mighty terrific in becoming, at once, the wife of the man

you adore, -and a Countess!"

I intreated her to spare her raillery, and tell me her real meaning. She could not prevail with her-felf to grant the first request, though she readily com-

plied with the fecond.

My poor father, she said, was still in the utmost uneasiness: he entered upon his affairs with great openness, and told her, he was equally disturbed how to dispose either of the daughter he had discovered, or the daughter he was now to give up; the former he dreaded to trust himself with again beholding, and the latter he knew not how to shock with the intelligence of her disgrace. Mrs. Selwyn then acquainted him with my situation in regard to Lord Orville: this delighted him extremely; and when he heard of his Lordship's eagerness, he said he was himself of opinion, the sooner the union took place, the better; and, in return, he informed her of the affair of Mr. Macartney. "And, after a very long conversation," continued Mrs. Selwyn, "we agreed, that the most eligible scheme for all parties would be, to have both the real and the sictious daughter married without delay. Therefore, if either of you have any inclination to pull caps for the title of Miss Belmont, you must do it with all speed, as next week will take from both of you all pretensions to it."

"Next week!—dear Madam, what a strange plan!—without my being consulted,—without applying to Mr. Villars,—without even the concur-

rence of Lord Orville!"

"As to confulting you, my dear, it was out of all question; because, you know, young ladies' hearts and hands are always to be given with reluctance:—as to Mr. Villars, it is sufficient we know him for your friend;—and as for Lord Orville, he is a party concerned."

" A party concerned !- you amaze me!"

"Why, yes; for as I found our consultation likely to redound to his advantage, I persuaded Sir John to send for him."

" Send for him! - Good God!"

"Yes; and Sir John agreed. I told the fervant, that if he could not hear of his Lordship in the house, he might be pretty certain of encountering him in the arbour.—Why do you colour, my dear?—Well, he was with us in a moment: I introduced him to Sir John; and we proceeded to business?"

"I am very, very forry for it !—Lord Orville must himself think this conduct strangely precipitate."

"No, my dear, you are mistaken; Lord Orville has too much good sense. Every thing was then discussed in a rational manner. You are to be married privately, though not secretly, and then go to

one of his Lordship's country seats: and poor little Miss Green and your brother, who have no house of their own, must go to one of Sir John's."

"But why, my dear Madam, why all this haste?" why may we not be allowed a little longer time?"

"I could give you a thousand reasons," answered she, "but that I am tolerably certain two or three will be more than you can controvert, even with all the logic of genuine coquetry. In the first place, you doubtless wish to quit the house of Mrs. Beaumont: to whose, then, can you with such propriety remove as to Lord Orville's?"

out

ake

Te.

108

"Surely, Madam," cried I, "I am not more deftitute now than when I thought myfelf an orphan?"

"Your father, my dear," answered she, "is willing to save the little impostor as much of the mortification of her disgrace as is in his power: now, if you immediately take her place, according to your right, as Miss Belmont, why, not all that either of you can do for her will prevent her being eternally stigmatized as the Bantling of Dame Green, washwoman and wet-nurse of Berry Hill, Dorsetshire. Now such a genealogy will not be very flattering, even to Mr. Macartney, who, all-dismal as he is, you will find by no means wanting in pride and self-consequence."

"For the universe," interrupted I, "I would not be accessary to the degradation you mention; but furely, Madam, I may return to Berry Hill?"

"By no means," faid she; "for though compassion may make us wish to save the poor girl the consustion of an immediate and publick fall, yet justice demands you should appear henceforward in no other light than that of Sir John Belmont's daughter. Besides, between friends, I, who know the world, can see, that half this prodigious delicacy for the little usurper is the mere result of self-interest; for while her affairs are husht up, Sir John's, you know, are kept from being brought further to light. Now the double marriage we have projected obviates all rati-

onal objections. Sir John will give you immediately 30,000l.; all fettlements, and so forth, will be made for you in the name of Evelina Belmont:—Mr. Macartney will at the same time take poor Polly Green; and yet, at first, it will only be generally known that a daughter of Sir John Belmont's is married."

In this manner, though she did not convince me, yet the quickness of her arguments silenced and perplexed me. I inquired, however, if I might not be permitted to again see my father, or whether I must regard myself as banished his presence for ever?"

"My dear," faid she, "he does not know you: he concludes that you have been brought up to detest him; and therefore he is rather prepared to dread than to love you."

than to love you."

This answer made me very unhappy: I wished, most impatiently to remove his prejudice, and endeavour, by dutiful assiduity, to engage his kindness; yet knew not how to propose seeing him, while conficious he wished to avoid me.

This evening, as foon as the company was engaged with cards, Lord Orville exerted his utmost eloquence to reconcile me to this hasty plan: but how was I startled when he told me that next Tuefday was the day appointed by my father to be the

most important of my life!

" Next Tuesday!" repeated I, quite out of

breath, "Oh, my Lord!--"

"My fweet Evelina," faid he, "the day which will make me the happiest of mortals, would probably appear awful to you, were it to be deferred a twelvement. Mrs. Selwyn has, doubtless, acquainted you with the many motives which, independent of my eagerness, require it to be speedy; suffer therefore its acceleration, and generously complete my felicity, by endeavouring to suffer it without repugnance."

"Indeed, my Lord, I would not wilfully raise objections, nor do I desire to appear insensible of the honour of your good opinion;—but there is some-

thing

thing in this plan—so very hasty,—so unreasonably precipitate:—besides, I shall have no time to hear from BerryHill;—and believe me, my Lord, I should be for ever miserable, were I, in an affair so important, to act without the sanction of Mr. Villar's advice."

He offered to wait on you himself; but I told him I had rather write to you. And then he proposed, that, instead of my immediately accompanying him to Lincolnshire, we should first pass a month at my

native Berry Hill.

This was, indeed, a grateful proposal to me, and I listened to it with undisguised pleasure. And, in short, I was obliged to consent to a compromise, in merely deferring the day till Thursday! He readily undertook to engage my father's concurrence in this little delay; and I besought him, at the same time, to make use of his influence to obtain me a second interview, and to represent the deep concern I selt in being thus banished his sight.

He would then have spoken of fettlements; but I affured him I was almost ignorant even of the word.

And now, my dearest Sir, what is your opinion of these hasty proceedings? Believe me, I half regret the simple facility with which I have suffered myself to be hurried into compliance; and should you start but the smallest objection, I will yet insist upon being allowed more time.

I must now write a concise account of the state of my affairs to Howard Grove, and to Madame Duval.

Adieu, dearest and most honoured Sir! every thing at present depends upon your single decision; to which, though I yield in trembling, I yield implicitly.

#### LETTER XXXV.

EVELINA in Continuation.

08. 11,

YESTERDAY morning, as soon as breakfast was over, Lord Orville went to the Hot-wells, to wait upon my father with my double petition.

Mrs.

Mrs. Beaumont then, in general terms, propofed a walk in the garden. Mrs. Selwyn faid she had letters to write; but Lady Louisa arose to ac-

company her.

I had had some reason to inagine, from the notice with which her Ladyship had honoured me during breakfast, that her brother had acquainted her with my present situation: and her behaviour now confirmed my conjectures; for when I would have gone up stairs, instead of suffering me, as usual, to pass disregarded, she called after me with an affected surprise, "Miss Anville, don't you walk with us?"

There feemed fomething so little-minded in this sudden change of conduct, that, from an involuntary motion of contempt, I thanked her with a coldness like her own, and declined her offer. Yet, observing that she blushed extremely at my refusal, and recollecting she was sister to Lord Orville, my indignation subsided; and upon Mrs. Beaumont's repeating the invitations.

ing the invitation, I accepted it.

Our walk proved extremely dull: Mrs. Beaumont, who never fays much, was more filent than usual; Lady Louisa strove, in vain, to lay aside the restraint and distance she had hitherto preserved; and as to me; I was too conscious of the circumstances to which I owed their attention, to feel either pride

or pleasure from receiving it.

Lord Orville was not long absent: he joined us in the garden with a look of gaiety and good humour that revived us all. "You are just the party," said he, "I wished to see together. Will you, Madam," taking my hand, "allow me the honour of introducing you, by your real name, to two of my nearest relations? Mrs. Beaumont, give me leave to present to you the daughter of Sir John Belmont; a young lady who, I am sure, must long since have engaged your esteem and admiration, though you were a stranger to her birth."

"My Lord," faid Mrs. Beaumont, graciously faluting me, "the young lady's rank in life, your

Lordship's

Lordship's recommendation, or her own merit, would any one of them have been sufficient to have intitled her to my regard: and I hope she has always met with that respect in my house which is so much her due; though, had I been sooner made acquainted with her family, I should doubtless have better known how to have secured it."

"Miss Belmont," said Lord Orville, "can receive no lustre from family, whatever she may give to it. Louisa, you will, I am sure, be happy to make yourself an interest in the friendship of Miss Belmont, whom I hope shortly," kissing my hand, and joining it with her Ladyship's, "to have the happiness of presenting to you by yet another name,

and by the most endearing of all titles."

I believe it would be difficult to say whose cheeks were, at that moment, of the deepest dye, Lady Louisa's or my own; for the conscious pride with which she has hitherto slighted me, gave to her an embarrassment which equalled the confusion that an introduction so unexpected gave to me. She saluted me, however; and, with a saint smile, said, "I shall esteem myself very happy to profit by the honour of Miss Belmont's acquaintance."

I only courtfey'd, and we walked on; but it was evident, from the little furprise they expressed, that they had been already informed of the state of

the affair.

We were foon after joined by more company: and Lord Orville then, in a low voice, took an opportunity to tell me the fuccefs of his vifit. In the first place, Thursday was agreed to; and, in the second, my father, he said, was much concerned to hear of my uneasines; sent me his blessing, and complied with my request of seeing him, with the same readines he should agree to any other I could make. Lord Orville, therefore, settled that I should wait upon him in the evening, and, at his particular request, unaccompanied by Mrs. Selwyn.

This

This kind message, and the prospect of so soon feeing him, gave me fenfations of mixed pleafure and pain, which wholly occupied my mind till the

time of my going to the Hot-well.

Mrs. Beaumont lent me her chariot, and Lord Orville absolutely insisted upon attending me. "If you go alone," faid he, "Mis. Selwyn will certainly be offended; but if you allow me to conduct you, though the may give the freer scope to her raillery, the cannot possibly be affronted: and we had much better suffer her laughter, than provoke her satire."

Indeed, I must own, I had no reason to regret being fo accompanied; for his conversation supported my fpirits from drooping, and made the ride feem fo fhort, that we actually stopped at my father's door,

before I knew he had proceeded ten yards.

He handed me from the carriage, and conducted me to the parlour; at the door of which I was met by Mr. Macartney. "Ah, my dear brother," cried

I, "how happy am I to fee you here!"

He bowed, and thanked me. Lord Orville, then, holding out his hand, faid, "Mr. Macartney, I hope we shall be better acquainted; I promise myself much pleasure from cultivating your friendship."

"Your Lordship does me but too much honour,"

answered Mr. Macartney.

"But where," cried I, "is my fister? for so I! must already call, and always consider her :- I am afraid she avoids me; -you must endeavour, my dear brother, to preposees her in my favour, and reconcile her to owning me."

"Oh, Madam," cried he, "you are all goodness, and benevolence! but at present I hope you will excuse her, for I fear she has hardly fortitude suffi-

cient to fee you: in a fhort time, perhaps-

" In a very thort time, then," faid Lord Orville, of I hope you will yourfelf introduce her, and that we shall have the pleasure of wishing you both joy: allow me, my Evelina, to fay we, and permit me, the

11 (

WI

ine

yo

in your name, as well as my own, to intreat that the first guests we shall have the happiness of receiving, may be Mr. and Mrs. Macartney."

A fervant then came to beg I would walk up stairs. I befought Lord Orville to accompany me; but he feared the displeasure of Sir John, who had defired to see me alone. He led me, however, to the foot of the stairs, and made the kindest efforts to give me courage: but indeed he did not succeed; for the interview appeared to me in all its terrors, and left me no feeling but apprehension.

The moment I reached the landing-place, the drawing-room door was opened; and my father, with a voice of kindness, called out, "My child, is it you?"

"Yes, Sir," cried I, fpringing forward, and kneeling at his feet, "it is your child if you will own her!"

He kneeled by my side, and folding me in his arms, "Own thee," repeated he, "yes, my poor girl, and Heaven knows with what bitter contrition!" Then raising both himself and me, he brought me into the drawing-room, shut the door, and took me to the window; where, looking at me with great earnest ness, "Poor unhappy Caroline!" cried he; and, to my inexpressible concern, he burst into tears. Need I tell you, my dear Sir, how mine slowed at the sight?

I would again have embraced his knees; but, harrying from me, he flung himself upon a sopha, and, leaning his face on his arms, seemed for some time absorbed in bitterness of grief.

I ventured not to interrupt a forrow I fo much respected; but waited in filence, and at a distance, till he recovered from its violence. But then it seemed in a moment to give way to a kind of frantic sury; for, starting suddenly, with a sternness which at once surprised and frightened me, "Child," cried he, "hast thou yet sufficiently humbled thy father?—if thou hast, be contented with this proof of my weakness, and no longer force thyself into my presence!"

Thunder-

Thunderstruck by a command so unexpected, I stood still and speechless, and doubted whether my own ears did not deceive me.

"Oh, go, go!" cried he passionately; "in pity—in compassion,—if thou valuest my senses, leave

me, and for ever !"

"I will, I will," cried I, greatly terrified; and I moved hastily towards the door: yet stopping when I reached it, and, almost involuntarily, dropping on my knees, "Vouchfafe," cried I, "oh, Sir, vouchfafe but once to bless your daughter, and her fight shall never more offend you!"

"Alas," cried he, in a foftened voice, "I am not worthy to bless thee!—I am not worthy to call thee daughter!—I am not worthy that the fair light of heaven should visit my eyes!—oh God! that I could but call back the time ere thou wast born,—or else bury its remembrance in eternal oblivion!"

"Would to Heaven," cried I, "that the fight of me were less terrible to you! that instead of irritating I could sooth your forrows!—Oh Sir, how thankfully would I then prove my duty, even at the

hazard of my life!"

"Are you so kind?" cried he, gently; "come hither, child;—rise, Evelina:—Alas, it is for me to kneel—, not you;—and I would kneel,—I would crawl upon the earth,—I would kiss the dust,—could I, by such submission, obtain the forgiveness of the representative of the most injured of women!"

"Oh, Sir," exclaimed I, "that you could but read my heart!—that you could but fee the filial tender-ness and concern with which it overflows!—you would not then talk thus,—you would not then banish me your presence, and exclude me from your affection!"

"Good God," cried he, " is it then possible that you do not hate me?—Can the child of the wronged Caroline look at,—and not execrate me? Wast thou not born to abhor, and bred to curse me? did not

thy

thy mother bequeath thee her bleffing, on condition that thou shouldst detest and avoid me?"

"Oh no, no, no!" cried I; "think not fo unkindly of her, nor fo hardly of me." I then took from my pocket book her last letter; and, pressing it to my lips, with a trembling hand, and still upon my knees, I held it out to him.

Hastily snatching it from me, "Great Heaven!" cried he, "'tis her writing—Whence comes this?—who gave it you?—why had I it not sooner?"

I made no answer; his vehemence intimidated me, and I ventured not to move from the suppliant posture in which I had put myself.

He went from me to the window, where his eyes were for fome time rivetted upon the direction of the letter, though his hand shook so violently he could hardly hold it. Then, bringing it to me, "Open it,"—cried he,—" for I cannot!"

I had myself hardly strength to obey him; but when I had, he took it back, and walked haltily up and down the room, as if dreading to read it. At length, turning to me, "Do you know," cried he, "its contents?"
"No Sir," answered I, "it has never been unsealed."

He then again went to the window, and began reading. Having hastily run it over, he cast up his eyes with a look of desperation; the letter fell from his hand, and he exclaimed, "Yes! thou art sainted!—thou art blessed!—and I am cursed for ever!" He continued some time in this melancholy position; after which, casting himself with violence upon the ground, "Oh wretch," cried he, "unworthy life and light, in what dungeon canst thou hide thy head?"

I could restrain myself no longer; I rose and went to him; I did not dare speak, but with pity and concern unutterable, I wept and hung over him.

Soon after, starting up, he again seized the letter, exclaiming, "Acknowledge thee, Caroline!—yes, with my heart's best blood would I acknowledge

ledge thee !—Oh that thou could'ft witness the agony of my foul!—Ten thousand daggers could not have have wounded me like this letter!"

Then, after again reading it, "Evelina," he cried, "she charges me to receive thee;—wilt thou, in obedience to her will, own for thy father the destroyer of thy mother?"

What a dreadful question!—I shuddered, but

could not speak.

"To clear her fame, and receive her child," continued he, looking steadfastly at the letter, "are the conditions upon which she leaves me her forgiveness: her fame I have already cleared;—and oh, how willingly would I take her child to my bosom, fold her to my heart,—call upon her to mitigate my anguish, and pour the balm of comfort on my wounds, were I not conscious I deserve not to receive it, and that all my affliction is the result of my own guilt!"

It was in vain I attempted to speak; horror and

grief took from me all power of utterance.

He then read aloud from the letter, "Look not like thy unfortunate mother!" Sweet foul, with what bitterness of spirit hast thou written?—Come hither, Evelina: GraciousHeaven!"looking earnestly at me, never was likeness more striking!—the eyes—the face—the form—Oh, my child, my child!" Imagine, Sir,—for I can never describe my feelings, when I saw him sink upon his knees before me! Oh, dear resemblanc of thy murdered mother!—Oh, all that remains of the most injured of women! behold thy sather at thy feet!—bending thus lowly to improre you would not hate him.—Oh, then, thou representative of my departed wise, speak to me in her name, and say that the remorse which tears my soul, tortures me not in vain!"

"Oh, rise, rise, my beloved father," cried L, attempting to affish him; "I cannot bear to see you thus; reverse not the law of nature; rise yourself,

and blefs your kneeling daughter !"

66 May

#

not

pai

COL

-

im

m

"May Heaven bless thee, my child—!" cried he, "for I dare not." He then rose; and embracing me most affectionately, added, "I see, I see that thou art all kindness, softness, and tenderness; I need not have feared thee, thou art all the fondest father could wish, and I will try to frame my mind to less painful sensations at thy sight. Perhaps the time may come when I may know the comforts of such a daughter;—at present, I am only sit to be alone: dreadful as are my reslections, they ought merely to torment myself.—Adieu, my child;—be not angry,—I cannot stay with thee;—Oh, Evelina! thy countenance is a dagger to my heart!—just so thy mother looked,—just so—"

Tears and fighs feemed to choak him!—and waving his hand, he would have left me;—but, clinging to him, "Oh, Sir," cried I, "will you fo foon abandon me?—am I again an orphan!—Oh, my dear, my long-lost father, leave me not, I beseech you! take pity on your child, and rob her not of the parent she so fondly hoped would cherish her!"

"You know not what you ask," cried he; "the emotions which now rend my soul are more than my reason can endure: suffer me, then, to leave you;—impute it not to unkindness, but think of me as well as thou canst. Lord Orville has behaved nobly;—I believe he will make thee happy. Then, again embracing me, "God bless thee, my dear child," cried he, "God bless thee, my Evelina!—endeavour to love,—at least not to hate me,—and to make me an interest in thy filial bosom, by thinking of me as thy father." I could not speak; I kissed his hands on my

knees; and then, with yet more emotion, he again bleffed me, and hurried out of the room,—leaving

me almost drowned in tears.

Oh, Sir, all goodness as you are, how much will you feel for your Evelina, during a scene of such agitation! I pray Heaven to accept the tribute of his remorse, and restore him to tranquillity!

When I was fufficiently composed to return to the

parlour,

parlour, I found Lord Orville waiting for me with the utmost anxiety:—and then a new scene of emotion, though of a far different nature, awaited me; for I learned by Mr. Macartney, that this noblest of men had insisted the so-long supposed Miss Belmont should be considered, indeed, as my sister, and as the co-heiress of my father! though not in law, in justice, he says, she ought ever to be treated as the daughter of Sir John Belmont.

Oh, Lord Orville!—it shall be the sole study of my happy life, to express, better than by words, the sense I have of your exalted benevolence and

greatness of mind!

### LETTER XXXVI.

EVELINA in Continuation.

Clifton, Oct. 12.

yo

me

ter

This morning early, I received the following letter from Sir Clement Willoughby.

To Miss Anville.

I HAVE this moment received intelligence that preparations are actually making for your marriage with Lord Orville.

Imagine not that I write with the imbecile idea of rendering those preparations abortive. No, I am not so mad. My sole view is to explain the motive of my conduct in a particular instance, and to obviate the accusation of treachery which may be laid to my charge.

My unguarded behaviour, when I last saw you, has, probably, already acquainted you, that the letter I then saw you reading was written by myself. For your further satisfaction, let me have the honour of informing you, that the letter you had designed for Lord Orville, had sallen into my hands.

However I may have been urged on by a passion the most violent that ever warmed the heart of man, I

can by no means calmly submit to be stigmatised for an action seemingly so dishonourable; and it is for this reason that I trouble you with my justification.

Lord Orville,—the happy Orville, whom you are fo ready to blefs,—had made me believe he loved you not;—nay, that he held you in contempt.

Such were my thoughts of his fentiments of you, when I got possession of the letter you meant to send him. I pretend not to vindicate either the means I used to obtain it, or the action of breaking the seal; but I was impelled by an impetuous curiosity to discover the terms upon which you wrote to him.

The letter, however, was wholly unintelligible to me, and the perusal of it only added to my perplexity.

A tame suspense I was not born to endure, and I determined to clear my doubts at all hazards and events. I answered it, therefore, in Orville's name.

The views which I am now going to acknow-ledge, must, infallibly, incur your displeasure;—yet

I fcorn all palliation.

Briefly then I concealed your

Briefly, then, I concealed your letter to prevent a discovery of your capacity; and I wrote you an answer, which I hoped would prevent your wishing for any other.

I am well aware of every thing which can be faid upon this subject. Lord Orville will, possibly, think himself ill-used; but I am extremely indifferent as to his opinion; nor do I now write by way of offering any apology to him, but merely to make known to yourself the reasons by which I have been governed.

I intend to set off next week for the Continent, Should his Lordship have any commands for me in the mean time, I shall be glad to receive them. I say not this by way of defiance,—I should blush to be suspected of so doing through an indirect channel; but simply that, if you show him this letter, he may know I dare defend, as well as excuse, my conduct.

CLEMENT WILLOUGHBY.

What a strange letter! how proud and how piqued does its writer appear! To what alternate meanness and

01

in

Wit

We

ex

and rashness do the passions lead, when reason and felf-denial do not oppose them! Sir Clement is confcious he has acted dishonourably; yet the same unbridled vehemence, which urged him to gratify a blameable curiosity, will sooner prompt him to risk his life, than confess his misconduct. The rudeness of his manner of writing to me, springs from the same cause: the proof he has received of my indifference to him, has stung him to the soul, and he has neither the delicacy nor forbearance to disguise his displeasure.

I determined not to show this letter to Lord Orville, and thought it most prudent to let Sir Clement know I should not. I therefore wrote the following note.

# To Sir Clement Willoughby.

SIR,

THE letter you have been pleased to address to me, is so little calculated to afford Lord Orville any satisfaction, that you may depend upon my carefully keeping it from his sight. I will bear you no resentment for what is past; but I must earnestly intreat, nay implore, that you will not write again, while in your present frame of mind, by any channel, direct or indirect.

I hope you will have much pleasure in your promised expedition; and I beg leave to assure you of my good wishes.

Not knowing by what name to fign, I was obliged to fend it without any.

The preparations which Sir Clement mentions, go on just as if your consent were arrived: it is in vain that I expostulate; Lord Orville says, should any objections be raised, all shall be given up, but that, as his hopes forbid him to expect any, he must proceed as if already affured of your concurrence.

We have had, this afternoon, a most interesting conversation, in which we have traced our sentiments

239

of each other from our first acquaintance. I have made him confess how ill he thought of me upon my foolish giddiness at Mrs. Stanley's ball; but he flatters me with affurances, that every succeeding time he saw me, I appeared to something less

and less disadvantage.

1 2

When I express my amazement that he could honour with his choice a girl who seemed so infinitely, in every respect, beneath his alliance, he frankly owned, that he had fully intended making more minute inquiries into my family and connections; and particularly concerning those people he saw me with at Marybone, before he acknowledged his prepossession in my favour: but the suddenness of my intended journey, and the uncertainty of seeing me again, put him quite off his guard; and, "divesting him of prudence, left him nothing but love." These were his words; and yet, he has repeatedly assured me, that his partiality has known no bounds from the time of my residing at Clifton,

\* \* \* \* \*

Mr. Macartney has just been with me, on an embassy from my father. He has sent me his kindest love and assurances of favour; and desired to know if I am happy in the prospect of changing my situation, and if there is any thing I can name which he can do for me. And, at the same time, Mr. Macartney delivered to me a draught on my father's banker for a thousand pounds, which he insisted that I should receive entirely for my own use, and expend in equipping myself properly for the new rank of life to which I seem destined.

I am fure I need not fay how much I was penetrated by this goodness; I wrote my thanks, and acknowledged, frankly, that if I could see him restored to tranquillity, my heart would be without a wish.

### LETTER XXXVII.

EVELINA in Continuation.

Clifton, Oct. 13.

1

the

66

neve:

ther

"

16

11)

"

11

W

this 1

With

nels t

OWIN

but :

I

mar

The time approaches now when I hope we shall meet;—yet I cannot sleep;—great joy is as restless as forrow,—and therefore I will continue

my journey.

As I had never had an opportunity of seeing Bath, a party was formed last night for showing me that celebrated city; and this morning, after breakfast, we set out in three phaetons. Lady Louisa and Mrs. Beaumont with Lord Merton; Mr. Coverley, Mr. Lovel, and Mrs. Selwyn, and myself, with Lord Orville.

We had hardly proceeded half a mile, when a gentleman from the post-chaise, which came gallopping after us, called out to the servants, "Holla, my lads!—pray, is one Miss Anville in any of them

thing-embobs?"

I immediately recollected the voice of Captain Mirvan; and Lord Orville stopped the phaeton. He was out of the chaife, and with us in a moment. "So, Miss Anville," cried he, "how do you do? so I hear you're Miss Belmont now;—pray, how does old Madame French do?"

"Madame Duval," faid I, "is, I believe, very well."

"I hope she is in good case," faid he, winking significantly, "and won't flinch at seeing service: she has laid by long enough to resit and be made tight. And pray how does poor Monseer Doleful do? is he as lank-jawed as ever?"

"They are neither of them," faid I, "in Bristol."

"No!" cried he, with a look of disappointment; but furely the old dowager intends coming to the wedding! 'twill be a most excellent opportunity to show off her best Lyons silk. Besides, I purpose to dance a new-fashioned jig with her. Don't you know when she'll come!"

"I have no reason to expect her at all."

Vê

UĜ

100

p-

W

No!—'Fore George, this here's the worst news I'd wish to hear!—why I've thought of nothing all the way, but what trick I should serve her!"

"You have been very obliging!" faid I, laughing.
"O, I promife you," cried he, "our Moll would never have wheedled me into this jaunt, if I'd known the was not here; for, to let you into the fecret, I fully intended to have treated the old buck with another frolic."

"Did Miss Mirvan, then, persuade you to this journey?"

"Yes, and we've been travelling all night."

"We!" cried I: "Is MissMirvan, then, with you?"
"What, Molly?—yes, she's in that there chaise."

"Good God, Sir, why did not you tell me fooner?" cried I; and immediately, with Lord Orville's affiftance, I jumped out of the phaeton, and ran to the dear girl. Lord Orville opened the chaife-door; and I am fure I need not tell you what unfeigned joy accompanied our meeting.

We both begged we might not be parted during the ride; and Lord Orville was fo good as to invite

Captain Mirvan into his phaeton.

I think I was hardly ever more rejoiced than at this so seasonable visit from my dear Maria; who had no sooner heard the situation of my affairs, than with the assistance of Lady Howard, and her kind mother, she befought her father with such earnest-ness to consent to the journey, that he had not been able to withstand their united intreaties; though she owned that, had he not expected to have met with Madame Duval, she believes he would not so readily have yielded. They arrived at Mrs. Beaumont's but a few minutes after we were out of sight, and overtook us without much difficulty.

I fay nothing of our conversation, because you may so well suppose both the subjects we chose, and

our manner of discussing them.

VOL. II. M

We

We all stopped at a great hotel, where we were obliged to enquire for a room, as Lady Louisa, fatigued to death, desired to take something before we began our rambles.

As foon as the party was affembled, the Captain, abruptly faluting me, faid "So, Mifs Belmont, I wifh you joy; fo I hear you've quarrelled with your

new name already?"

"Me!-no, indeed, Sir."

"Then please for to tell me the reason you're in

fuch a hurry to change it."

"Miss Belmont!" cried Mr. Lovel, looking around him with the utmost astonishment: "I beg pardon; —but, if it is not impertinent,—I must beg leave to say I always understood that Lady's name was Anville."

"'Fore George," cried the Captain, "it runs in my head, I've feen you fomewhere before! and now I think on't; pray a'n't you the perfon I faw at the play one night, and who didn't know, all the time, whether it was a tragedy or a concert of fiddlers?"

"I believe, Sir," faid Mr. Lovel, stammering, "I had once,—I think—the pleasure of seeing

you last spring."

"Aye, and if I live an hundred springs," answered he, "I shall never forget it; by Jingo, it has served me for a most excellent good joke ever since. Well, howsomever, I'm glad to see you still in the land of the living," shaking him roughly by the hand. "Pray, if a body may be so bold, how much a night may you give at present to keep the undertakers aloos?"

"Me, Sir!" faid Mr. Lovel very much discomposed; "I protest I never thought myself in such imminent danger as to—really, Sir, I don't under-

ftand you."

"O, you don't! why then I'll make free for to explain myfelf. Gentlemen and Ladies, I'll tell you what; do you know this here gentleman, fimple as he fits there, pays five shillings a-night to let his friends know he's alive!"

" And

"And very cheap too," faid Mrs. Selwyn, "if we confider the value of the intelligence."

Lady Louisa, being now refreshed, we proceeded

upon our expedition.

n;

wl

ray,

you

r to

YOU

The charming city of Bath answered all my expectations. The Crescent, the prospect from it, and the elegant symmetry of the Circus, delighted me. The Parades, I own, rather disappointed me; one of them is scarce preserable to some of the best paved streets in London; and the other, though it affords a beautiful prospect, a charming view of Prior Park and of the Avon, yet wanted something in itself of more striking elegance than a mere broad pavement, to satisfy the ideas I had formed of it.

At the pump-room, I was amazed at the public exhibition of the ladies in the bath: it is true, their heads are covered with bonnets; but the very idea of being feen, in such a situation, by whoever

pleases to look, is indelicate.

"'Fore George," faid the Captain, looking into the bath, "this would be a most excellent place for old Madame French to dance a fandango in! By Jingo, I wou'dn't wish for better sport than to swing her round this here pond!"

"She would be very much obliged to you," faid Lord Orville, "for foextraordinary a mark of your favour."

"Why, to let you know," answered the Captain, " she hit my fancy mightily; I never took so

much to an old tabby before."

"Really now," cried Mr. Lovel, looking also into the bath, "I must confess it is, to me, very incomprehensible why the ladies choose that frightful unbecoming dress to bathe in! I have often pondered very seriously upon the subject, but could never hit upon the reason."

"Well, I declare," faid Lady Louisa, "I should like of all things to set something new a-going; I always hated bathing, because one can get no pretty dress for it! now do, there's a good creature, try

to help me to fomething."

M 2

44 Who

"Who me!—O dear Ma'am," faid he, simpering, I can't pretend to assist a person of your Ladyship's taste; besides, I have not the least head for fashions.—I really don't think I ever invented above three in my life! but I never had the least turn for dress,—never any notion of fancy or elegance."

"O fie, Mr. Lovel! how can you talk so?—don't we all know that you lead the ton in the beau monde? I declare, I think you dress better than any body."

degree! I drefs well!—I protest I don't think I'm ever fit to be seen!—I'm often shocked to death to think what a sigure I go. If your Ladyship will believe me, I was full half an hour this morning thinking what I should put on!"

"Odds my life," cried the Captain, "I wish I'd been near you! I warrant I'd have quickened your motions a little! Half an hour thinking what you'd put on! and who the deuce do you think cares the snuff of a candle whether you've anything on or not?"

"O pray, Captain," cried Mrs. Selwyn, "don't be angry with the gentleman for thinking, whatever be the cause, for I assure you he makes no common practice of offending in that way."

"Really, Ma'am, you're prodigiously kind," said

Mr. Lovel, angrily.

"Pray now," faid the Captain, "did you ever

get a ducking in that there place yourself?"

"A ducking, Sir!" repeated Mr. Lovel; "I protest I think that's rather an odd term!—but if you mean a bathing, it is an honour I have had many times."

"And pray, if a body may be fo bold, what do you do with that frizle-frize top of your own? Why, I'll lay you what you will, there is fat and grease enough on your crown to buoy you up, if you were to go in head downwards."

"And I don't know," cried Mrs. Selwyn, "but that might be the easiest way; for I'm sure it would

be the lightest."

YOU

mo

Wh

ma

of

pe

m

"You must make him a soldier, before you can tell which is lightest, head or heels. Howsomever, I'd lay ten pounds to a shilling, I could whish him so dexteroully over into the pool, that he should light plump upon his foretop, and turn round like a tetotum."

"Done!" cried Lord Merton; "I take your odds."
"Will you?" returned he; "why then, 'fore
George, I'd do it as foon as fay Jack Robinson."

"He, he!" faintly laughed Mr. Lovel, as he moved abruptly from the window; "'pon honour, this is pleafant enough; but I don't fee what right any body has to lay wagers about one, without one's confent."

"There, Lovel, you are out," cried Mr. Coverley; any man may lay what wager about you he will; your consent is nothing to the purpose: he may lay that your nose is a sky-blue, if he pleases."

"Ay," faid Mrs. Selwyn, " or that your mind is more adorned than your person;—or any absurdity

whatfoever."

"I protest," said Mr. Lovel, "I think it's a very disagreeable privilege, and I must beg that nobody

may take such a liberty with me."

"Like enough you may," cried the Captain;
"but what's that to the purpose? Suppose I've a mind to lay that you've never a tooth in your head?

—pray, how will you hinder me?"

"You'll allow me, at least, Sir, to take the liberty

of asking how you'll prove it?"

"How?-why, by knocking them all down

your throat."

"Knocking them all down my throat, Sir!" repeated Mr. Lovel, with a look of horror, "I protest I never heard any thing so shocking in my life; and I must beg leave to observe, that no wager, in my opinion, could justify such a barbarous action."

Here Lord Orville interfered, and hurried us to

our carriages.

We returned in the fame order we came. Mrs.

Beaumont

til

be

my

hi

16

me

de

CO

70

W

Beaumout invited all the party to dinner, and has been so obliging as to beg Miss Mirvan may continue at her house during her stay. The Captain will lodge at the Wells.

The first half-hour after our return was devoted to hearing Mr. Lovel's apologies for dining in his

riding-dress.

Mrs. Beaumont then, addressing herself to Miss Mirvan and me, inquired how we liked Bath?

"I hope," faid Mr. Lovel, "the Ladies do not

call this feeing Bath."

"No?—what should ail 'em?" cried the Captain; "do you suppose they put their eyes in their pockets?"

"No, Sir; but I fancy you will find no person,—that is, no person of any condition,—call going about a few places in a morning seeing Bath.

"Mayhap, then," faid the literal Captain, "you think we should see it better by going about at

midnight?"

"No, Sir, no," faid Mr. Lovel, with a fupercilious smile, "I perceive you don't understand me;—we should never call it feeing Bath, without going at the right season."

"Why, what a plague, then," demanded he, can you only see at one season of the year?"

Mr. Lovel again smiled; but seemed superior to

making any answer.

"The Bath amusements," faid Lord Orville "have a sameness in them, which, after a short time, renders them rather insipid: but the greatest objection that can be made to the place, is the encouragement it gives to gamesters."

"Why, I hope, my Lord, you would not think of abolishing gaming," cried Lord Merton; "'tis the very zest of life! Devil take me if I could live without it."

"I am forry for it," faid Lord Orville, gravely, and looking at Lady Louisa.

"Your Lordship is no judge of this subject," continued

tinued the other; -"but if once we could get you to a gaming-table, you'd never be happy away from it!"

"I hope, my Lord," cried Lady Louisa, "that nobody bere ever occasions you'd never be happy away from it."

"Your Ladyship," faid Lord Merton, recollecting himself, "has power to make me quit any thing."

" Except herself," said Mr. Coverley.

my Lord, I think I've helpt you out there."

"You men of wit, Jack," answered his Lordship, "are always ready; -- for my part, I don't pretend to any talents that way."

"Really, my Lord?" asked the farcastic Mrs. Selwyn; "well, that is wonderful, confidering

fuccess would be so much in your power."

" Pray, Ma'am," faid Mr. Lovel to Lady Louifa, "has your Ladyship heard the news?"

" News !-what news ?"

"Why, the report circulating at the Wells concerning a certain person."

"O Lord, no; pray tell me what it is?"

"O no, Ma'am, I beg your La'ship will excuse me; 'tis a profound fecret, and I would not have mentioned it, if I had not thought you knew it."

"Lord, now, how can you be fo monstrous? I declare, now, you're a provoking creature! But come, I know you'll tell me; -won't you, now?"

"Your La'ship knows I am but too happy to obey you; but 'pon honour I can't speak a word, if you won't all promise me the most inviolable secrecy."

"I wish you'd wait for that from me," said the Captain, " and I'll give you my word you'd be dumb for one while. Secrecy, quoth a!- 'Fore George, I wonder you a'n't ashamed to mention such a word, when you talk of telling it to a woman. Though, for the matter of that, I'd as lieve blab it to the whole fex at once, as to go for to tell it to fuch a thing as you."

"Such a thing as me, Sir!" faid Mr. Lovel, letting fall his knife and fork, and looking very important: " I really have not the honour to under-

stand your expression."

"It's all one for that, faid the Captain; "you

may have it explained whenever you like it."

"Pon honour, Sir," returned Mr. Lovel, "I must take the liberty totell you, that I should be extremely offended, but that I suppose it to be some sea-phrase; and therefore I'll let it pass without further notice."

Lord Orville, then, to change the discourse, asked Miss Mirvan if she should spend the ensuing

winter in London?

"No, to be fure," faid the Captain, "what should the for? she saw all that was to be seen before."

"Is London, then," faid Mr. Lovel, smiling at Lady Louisa, "only to be regarded as a fight?"

"Why, pray, Mr. Wiseacre, how are you pleased for to regard it yourself?—Answer me to that."

"O Sir, my opinion, I fancy, you would hardly find intelligible. I don't understand fea-phrases enough to define it to your comprehension. Does not your La'ship think the task would be rather difficult?"

"O Lard, yes," cried Lady Louisa; "I declare

I'd as foon teach my parrot to talk Welsh."

"Ha! ha! ha! admirable!—'Pon honour your La'ship's quite in luck to-day;—but that, indeed, your La'ship is every day. Though, to be sure, it is but candid to acknowledge, that the gentlemen of the ocean have a set of ideas, as well as a dialect, so opposite to our's, that it is by no means surprising, they should regard London as a mere show, that may be seen by being looked at. Ha! ha!

"Ha! ha!" echoed Lady Louisa: "Well, I

declare you are the drollest creature!"

"He! he! 'pon honour I can't help laughing at

the conceit of feeing London in a few weeks!"

"And what a plague should hinder you?" cried the Captain; "do you want to spend a day in every street?"

Here again Lady Louisa and Mr. Lovel interchanged smiles.

"Why, I warrant you, if I had the showing it,

I'd haul you from St. James's to Wapping the very

first morning."

The fmiles were now, with added contempt, repeated; which the Captain observing, looked very fiercely at Mr. Lovel, and said, "Hark'ee, my spark, none of your grinning!—'tis a lingo I don't understand; and if you give me any more of it, I shall go near to lend you a box o' the ear."

"I protest, Sir," faid Mr. Lovel, turning extremely pale, "I think it's taking a very particular liberty with a person, to talk to one in such a style

as this!"

"It's like you may," returned the Captain; "but give a good gulp, and I'll warrant you'll fwallow it." Then, calling for a glass of ale, with a very provoking and fignificant nod, he drank to his easy digestion.

Mr. Lovel made no answer, but looked extremely fullen: and soon after we left the gentlemen to

themselves.

I had had then two letters delivered to me; one from Lady Howard and Mrs. Mirvan, which contained the kindest congratulations; and the other from Madame Duval;—but not a word from you,—

to my no fmall furprise and concern.

Madame Duval feems greatly rejoiced at my late intelligence: a violent cold, she says, prevents her coming to Bristol. The Branghtons, she tells me, are all well; Miss Polly is soon to be married to Mr. Brown; but Mr. Smith has changed his lodgings, "which," she adds, "has made the house extremely dull. However, that's not the worst news; pardi, I wish it was! but I've been used like nobody,—for Monsieur Du Bois has had the baseness to go back to France without me." In conclusion, she assures me, as you prognosticated she would, that I shall be sole heires of all she is worth, when Lady Orville.

At tea time we were joined by all the gentlemen but Captain Mirvan, who went to the hotel where he was to sleep, and made his daughter ac-

company

company him, to separate her trumpery, as he called it, from his clothes.

As foon as they were gone, Mr. Lovel, who still appeared extremely sulky, said, "I protest, I never saw such a vulgar, abusive fellow in my life, as that Captain: 'pon honour, I believe he came here for no purpose in the world but to pick a quarrel; however, for my part, I vow I wo'n' humour him."

"I declare," cried Lady Louisa, "he put me in a monstrous fright;—I never heard any body talk so shocking in my life!"

"I think," faid Mrs. Selwyn, with great folemnity, "he threatened to box your ears, Mr. Lovel;—did not he?"

"Really, Ma'am," faid Mr. Lovel, colouring, if one was to mind every thing those low kind of people fay,—one should never be at rest for one impertinence or other; so I think the best way is to be above taking any notice of them."

"What," faid Mrs. Selwyn, with the fame gra-

vity, "and so receive the blow in silence!"

During this discourse, I heard the Captain's chaise stop at the door, and ran down stairs to meet Maria. She was alone, and told me that her father, who, she was sure, had some scheme in agitation against Mr. Lovel, had sent her on before him. We continued in the parlour till his return, and were joined by Lord Orville; who begged me not to insist on a patience so unnatural, as submitting to be excluded our society. And let me, my dear Sir, with a grateful heart let me own, I never before passed half an hour in such persect selicity.

I believe we were all forry, when the Captain returned; yet his inward fatisfaction, from however different a cause, did not seem inserior to what ours had been. He chucked Maria under the chin, rubbed his hands, and was scarce able to contain the fullness of his glee. We all attended him to the drawing-room; where, having composed his countenance,

without

Wa

without any previous attention to Mrs. Beaumont, he marched up to Mr. Lovel, and abruptly faid, "Pray, have you e'er a brother in these here parts?"

"Me, Sir?—no, thank Heaven, I'm free from

all encumbrances of that fort."

"Well," cried the Captain, "I met a person just now, so like you, I could have sworn he had

been your twin-brother."

"It would have been a most singular pleasure to me," faid Mr. Lovel, "if I also could have seen him; for, really, I have not the least notion what fort of a person I am, and I have a prodigious curiosity to know."

Just then, the Captain's servant opening the door, faid, "A little gentleman below defires to see one

Mr. Lovel."

"Beg him to walk up stairs," faid Mrs. Beaumont.

"But pray, what is the reason William is out of the way?"

The man shut the door without any answer.

"I can't imagine who it is," faid Mr. Lovel:
"I recollect no little gentleman of my acquaintance now at Bristol,—except indeed the Marquis of
Charlton;—but I don't much fancy it can be him.
Let me see, who esse is there so very little?"

A confused noise among the servants now drew all eyes towards the door: the impatient Captain hastened to open it; and then, clapping his hands, call'd out, "'Fore George, 'tis the same person I

took for your relation!"

And then, to the utter aftonishment of every body but himself, he hauled into the room a monkey, full-

dressed, and extravagantly à la mode!

The difmay of the company was almost general. Poor Mr. Lovel seemed thunderstruck with indignation and surprise: Lady Louisa began a scream, which for some time was incessant; MissMirvan and I jumped involuntarily upon the seats of our chairs; Mrs. Beaumont herself followed our example; Lord Orville placed himself before me as a guard; and Mrs. Selwyn, Lord Merton, and Mr. Coverley, burst into a loud,

immoderate, ungovernable fit of laughter, in which they were joined by the Captain, till, unable to sup-

port himself, he rolled on the floor.

The first voice which made its way through this general noise, was that of Lady Louisa, which her fright and screaming rendered extremely shrill. "Take it away!" cried she, "take the monster away;—I shall faint, I shall faint if you don't!"

Mr. Lovel, irritated beyond endurance, angrily

demanded of the Captain what he meant?

"Mean?" cried the Captain, as foon as he was capable to speak; "why only to show you in your proper colours." Then rising, and pointing to the monkey, "Why now, Ladies and Gentlemen, I'll be judged by you all!—Did you ever see any thing more like? Odds my life, if it wasn't for this here tail, you wouldn't know one from t'other."

"Sir," cried Mr. Lovel, stamping, "I shall take

a time to make you feel my wrath."

"Come now," continued the regardless Captain, "just for the fun's sake, doff your coat and waistcoat, and swop with Monsieur Grinagain here; and I'll warrant you'll not know yourself which is which."

"Not know myself from a monkey?—I affure you, Sir, I'm not to be used in this manner, and I

won't bear it ;-curse me if I will!"

"Why, heyday," cried the Captain; "What, is Master in a passion?—well, don't be angry:—come, he sha'n't hurt you;—here, shake a paw with him:—why he'll do you no harm, man!—come, kiss and be friends!"

"Who I?" cried Mr. Lovel, almost mad with vexation; "as I'm a living creature, I would not

touch him for a thousand worlds!"

"Send him a challenge," cried Mr. Coverley;

"and I'll be your fecond."

"Ay, do," faid the Captain; " and I'll be fecond to my friend Monsieur Clapperclaw here. Come, to it at once!—tooth and nail!"

" God

m

L

"God forbid!" cried Mr. Lovel, retreating, "I would fooner trust my person with a mad-bull!"

"I don't like the looks of him myfelf," faid Lord Merton, "for he grins most horribly."

"Oh, I'm frightened out of my senses!" cried Lady Louisa, "take him away, or I shall die!"

"Captain," faid Lord Orville, "the ladies are alarmed; and I must beg you would fend the mon-

key away."

"Why, where can be the mighty harm of one monkey more than another?" answered the Captain: "howsomever, if it's agreeable to the ladies, suppose we turn them out together?"

"What do you mean by that, Sir?" cried Mr.

Lovel, lifting up his cane.

"What do you mean?" cried the Captain fiercely: "be fo good as to down with your cane."

Poor Mr. Lovel, too much intimidated to stand his ground, yet too much enraged to submit, turned hastily round, and, forgetful of confequences, vented his passion by giving a surious blow to the monkey.

The creature darting forwards, sprung instantly upon him; and, clinging round his neck, sastened

his teeth to one of his ears.

I was really forry for the poor man; who, though an egregious fop, had committed no offence that merited such chastisement.

It was impossible now to distinguish whose screams were loudest, those of Mr. Lovel, or of the terrified Lady Louisa, who, I believe, thought her own turn was approaching: but the unrelenting

Captain roared with joy.

Not fo, Lord Orville: ever humane, generous, and benevolent, he quitted his charge, who he faw was wholly out of danger, and feizing the monkey by the collar, made him loofen the ear; and then, with a fudden fwing, flung him out of the room, and shut the door.

Poor Mr. Lovel, almost fainting with terror, funk upon the floor, crying out, "Oh, I shall die,

I shall die!-Oh, I'm bit to death!"

"Captain Mirvan," faid Mrs. Beaumont, with no little indignation, "I must own I don't perceive the wit of this action; and I am forry to have such cruelty practifed in my house."

"Why, Lord, Ma'am," faid the Captain, when his rapture abated fufficiently for speech, "how could I tell they'd fall out so?—By jingo, I brought

him to be a messmate for t'other."

" Egad," faid Mr. Coverley, " I would not have

been ferved fo for a thousand pounds!"

"Why, then, there's the odds of it," faid the Captain; "for you fee he is ferved fo for nothing. But come," (turning to Mr. Lovel) "be of good heart, all may end well yet, and you and Monfeer Longtail be as good friends as ever."

"I'm furprised, Mrs. Beaumont," cried Mr. Lovel, starting up, "that you can suffer a perso under your roof to be treated so inhumanly."

"What argufies fo many words?" faid the unfeeling Captain; "it is but a flit of the ear; it only looks as if you had been in the pillory."

"Very true," added Mrs. Selwyn; " and who knows but it may acquire you the credit of being an

anti-ministerial writer?"

"I protest," cried Mr. Lovel, looking ruefully at his dress, "my new riding suit's all over blood!"

"Ha, ha, ha!" cried the Captain, " fee what comes of studying for an hour what you shall put on!"

Mr. Lovel then walked to the glass; and looking at the place, exclaimed, "Oh Heaven, what a monstrous wound! my ear will never be fit to be feen again!"

"Why, then," faid the Captain, " you must

hide it ;- 'tis but wearing a wig."

"A wig!" repeated the affrighted Mr. Lovel; "I wear a wig?—no, not if you would give me a thousand pounds an hour!"

"I declare," faid Lady Louisa, "I never heard

fuch a shocking proposal in my life!"

Lord Orville then, feeing no profpect that the al-

tercation would cease, proposed to the Captain towalk. He assented; and having given Mr. Lovel a nod of exultation, accompanied his Lordship down stairs.

"'Pon honour," faid Mr. Lovel, the moment the door was shut, "that fellow is the greatest brute in nature! he ought not to be admitted into a civilized society."

"Lovel," faid Mr. Coverley, affecting to whifper, "you must certainly pink him: you must not

put up with fuch an affront."

"Sir," faid Mr. Lovel, "with any common person I should not deliberate an instant; but really with a fellow who has done nothing but fight all his life, 'pon honour, Sir, I can't think of it!"

"Lovel," faid Lord Merton, in the same voice,

" you must call him to account."

"Every man," faid he pettishly, " is the best judge of his own affairs; and I don't ask the honour of any person's advice."

" Egad, Lovel," faid Mr. Coverley, " you're in

for it!—you can't possibly be off!"

"Sir," cried he very impatiently, "upon any proper occasion, I should be as ready to show my courage as any body;—but as to fighting for such a trifle as this—I protest I should blush to think of it!"

"A trifle!" cried Mrs. Selwyn, "good Heaven! and have you made this aftonishing riot about a trifle?"

"Ma'am," answered the poor wretch, in great consussion, "I did not know at first but that my cheek might have been bit;—but as 'tis no worse, why, it does not a great deal signify. Mrs. Beaumont, I have the honour to wish you a good evening; I'm sure my carriage must be waiting." And then, very abruptly, he lest the room.

What a commotion has this mischief-loving Captain raised! Were I to remain here long, even the society of my dear Maria could scarce compensate

for the disturbances which he excites.

When he returned, and heard of the quiet exit of Mr.

Mr. Lovel, his triumph was intolerable. "I think, I think," cried he, "I have peppered him well! I'll warrant he won't give an hour to-morrow morning to fettling what he shall put on; why, his coat," turning to me, "would be a most excellent match for old Madame Furbelow's best Lyons silk! 'Fore George, I'd desire no better sport than to have that there old cat here to go her snacks!"

All the company then, Lord Orville, Miss Mirvan, and myself excepted, played at cards; and we—oh how much better did we pass our time!

While we were engaged in a most delightful conversation, a servant brought me a letter, which he told me had by some accident been mislaid. Judge of my feelings when I saw, my dearest Sir, your revered hand-writing! My emotions soon betrayed to Lord Orville whom the letter was from; the importance of the contents he well knew; and, assuring me I should not be seen by the card-players, he besought me to open it with-

out delay.

Open it, indeed, I did—but read it I could not;—the willing, yet awful confent you have granted—the tenderness of your expressions—the certainty that no obstacle remained to my eternal union with the loved owner of my heart, gave me sensations too various, and, though joyful, too little placid for observation. Finding myself unable to proceed, and blinded by the tears of gratitude and delight, which started into my eyes, I gave over the attempt of reading till I retired to my own room; and, having no voice to answer the inquiries of Lord Orville, I put the letter into his hands, and left it to speak both for me and itself.

Lord Orville was himself affected by your kindness: he kissed the letter as he returned it; and, pressing my hand affectionately to his heart, "You are now," said he, in a low voice, "all my own! Oh, my Evelina, how will my soul find room for its happiness?—it feems already bursting!" I could make no reply: indeed I hardly spoke another word the rest of the evening; so little talkative is

the fulness of contentment.

O, my dearest Sir, the thankfulness of my heart I must pour forth at our meeting, when, at your feet, my happiness receives its confirmation from your bleffing; and when my noble-minded, my beloved Lord Orville, presents to you the highlyhonoured and thrice-happy Evelina.

A few lines I will endeavour to write on Thurfday, which shall be fent off express, to give you, should nothing intervene, yet more certain assurance

of our meeting.

Now then, therefore, for the first-and probably the last time I shall ever own the name, permit me to fign myself,

> Most dear Sir. Your gratefully affectionate.

EVELINA BELMONT.

Lady Louisa, at her own particular desire, will be prefent at the ceremony, as well as Miss Mirvan and Mrs. Selwyn: Mr. Macartney will, the fame morning be united to my foster-fister; and my father himself will give us both away.

## LETTER XXXVIII.

Mr. VILLARS to EVELINA.

EVERY wish of my soul is now fulfilled for the felicity of my Evelina is equal to her worthiness!

Yes, my child, thy happiness is engraved in golden characters upon the tablets of my heart; and their impression is indelible: for, should the VOL. II.

rude and deep fearching-hand of Misfortune attempt to pluck them from their repository, the fleeting fabric of life would give way; and in tearing from my vitals the nourishment by which they are supported, she would but grasp at a shodow infensible to her touch.

Give thee my confent?—Oh thou joy, comfort, and pride of my life, how cold is that word to express the fervency of my approbation! yes, I do indeed, give thee my confent; and so thankfully, that, with the humblest gratitude to Providence, I would feal it with the remnant of my days.

Hasten then, my love, to bless me with thy prefence, and to receive the bleffings which my fond heart overflows!-And oh, my Evilina, hear and affift in one only humble, but ardent prayer, which yet animates my devotions: That the height of blifs to which thou art rifing may not render thee giddy, but that the purity of thy mind may form the brightest splendor of thy prosperity!and that the weak and aged frame of thy almost idolizing parent, nearly worn out by time, past afflictions, and infirmities, may yet be able to fuftain a meeting with all its better part holds dear; and then, that all the wounds which the former feverity of fortune inflicted, may be healed and purified by the ultimate confolation of pouring forth my dying words in bleffings on my child!-clofing these joy-streaming eyes in her presence, and breathing my last faint fighs in her loved arms!

Grieve not, oh child of my care! grieve not at the inevitable moment! but may thy own end be equally propitious! Oh may'ft thou, when full of days, and fall of honour, fink down as gently to rest!-be loved as kindly, watched as tenderly, as thy happy father! And may'st thou, when thy glass is run, be sweetly, but not bitterly, mourned by some remaining darling of thy affections-some

yet furviving Evelina!

ARTHUR VILLARS.

## LETTER XXXIX.

EVELINA to the Rev. Mr. VILLARS.

All is over, my dearest Sir; and the fate of your Evelina is decided! This morning, with fearful joy and trembling gratitude, she united herfelf for ever with the object of her dearest, her eternal affection.

I have time for no more; the chaife now waits which is to conduct me to dear Berry Hill, and to the arms of the best of men.

EVELINA.

FINIS.

## DIRECTIONS TO THE BINDER.

Don't beat the Plates; those marked Vol. I. and II. are to face the Titles of each respective Volume; between which and them put Tissue Paper.

The other Plate to face Page 174 of the First Volume.

## BOOKS PRINTED FOR W. LOWNDES.

1. In 12mo. Price 1s. 6d. fewed, or 2s. half-bound, (and 4s. half-bound, with the London Directory and Guide to Stage Coaches, &c.) embellished by a New Map of the Capital, coloured, a Plan of the Royal Exchange, and View of the Adelphi,

THE LONDON COMPANION, or, CITIZEN and STRANGER'S GUIDE through the Metropolis and its Environs; being a List of the various Streets, Lanes, Squares, Courts, Alleys and Passages, with the most remarkable Public Buildings, Offices, Places, &c. ranged alphabetically. To which are added, the principal Hackney Coach Fares, an Admeasurement of the Streets, and the Rates of Watermen.

N. B. The Map and Plan may be had feparate, Price Sixpence, or One Shilling in a Cafe for the Pocket, and One Shilling and Sixpence, on Canvass, in a Case.

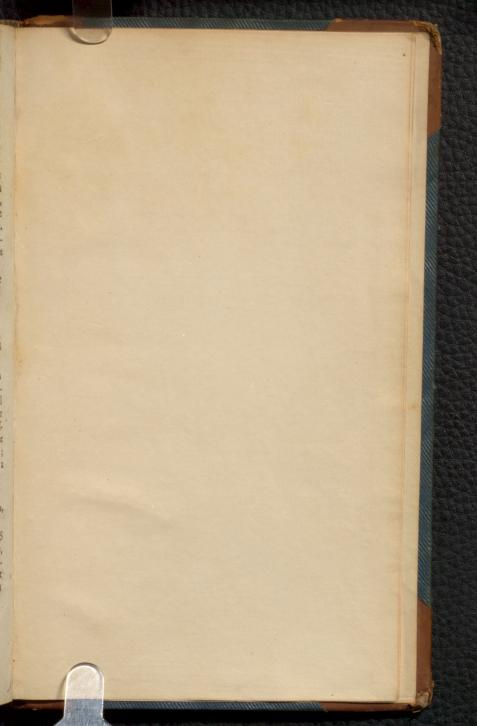
2. In fmall 8vo. Price 1s. fewed, or 1s. 6d. half-bound, and 6d. extra if with the Map of London, and Plan of the Royal Exchange,

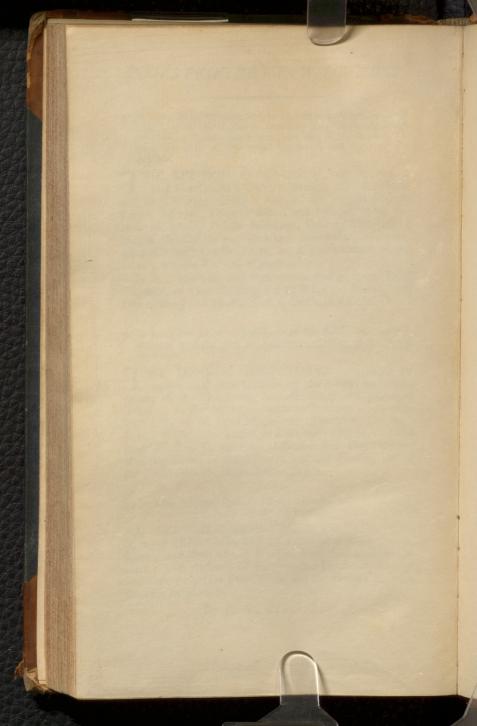
THE LONDON DIRECTORY, containing an alphabetical Arrangement of the Names and Refidences of the Merchants, Manufacturers, and principal Traders, in the Metropolis and its Environs; together with Lists of the Lord Mayor and Aldermen, Commissioners of Customs, Excise, and Stamps; Directors, of the great Trading Companies; Assurance and Fire Offices; also the Firms of the different Banking Houses, and a particular Account of the Public Funds.

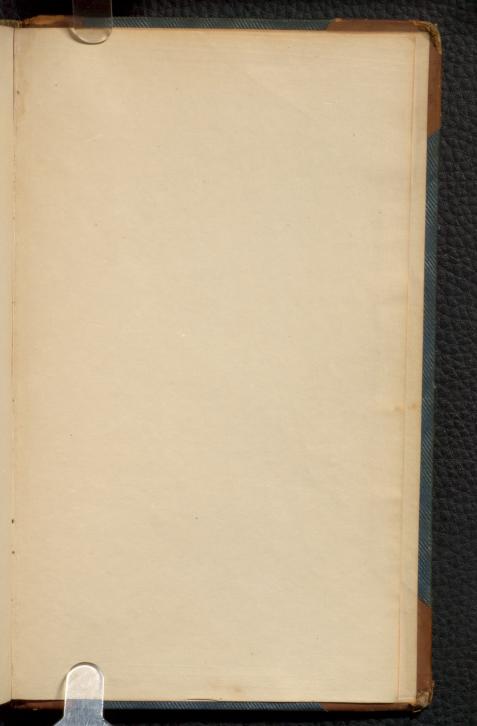
3. In One Volume Quarto, illustrated with coloured Charts,
Price 10s. 6d. in boards,

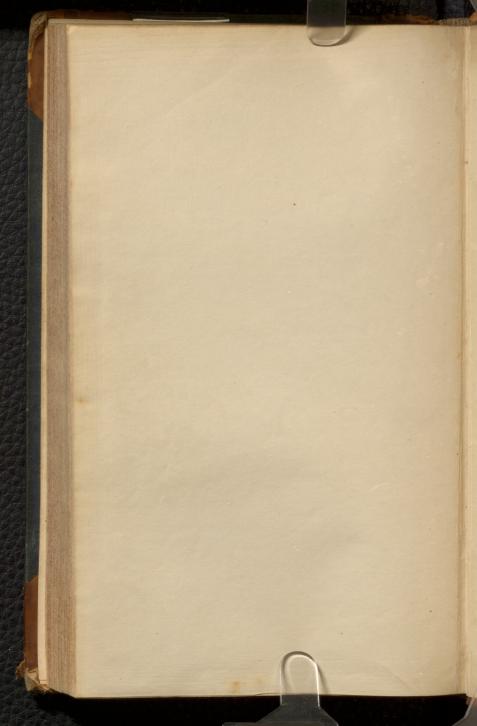
A SKETCH of the REVENUE and FINANCES of IRELAND, and of the appropriated Funds, Loans, and Debt of the Nation, from their Commencement: with Abstracts of the principal Heads of Receipt and Expenditure for fixty Years, and the various Supplies fince the Revolution.

By R. V. CLARENDON.









\* PR 3316 A4 E8 1791 v. 2

